

**FREE OF CHARGE**



**JESUS CHRIST IS COMING**

**REVELATIONS TIME OF THE END**

**THE SOUND DOCTRINE**

**IS JESUS CHRIST GOD  
THE FATHER, THE SON,  
AND THE HOLY SPIRIT?**

**Source & Contact:**

**Website: <https://www.mcreveil.org>**

**E-mail: [mail@mcreveil.org](mailto:mail@mcreveil.org)**

# **Jesus Christ is the True God And Eternal Life**

***But you, Daniel, shut up the words, and seal the book until the time of the end; many shall run to and fro, and knowledge shall increase.***  
**Daniel 12:4**

***Go your way, Daniel, for the words are closed up and sealed till the time of the end. Many shall be purified, made white, and refined, but the wicked shall do wickedly; and none of the wicked shall understand, but the wise shall understand.***

**Daniel 12:9-10**

**\*\*\***

**Before you begin reading this Teaching,  
Take a few minutes and meditate on the following question:**

**Where will you spend your Eternity?**

**In Heaven?**

**Or**

**In Hell?**

**Hell is Real, and it is Eternal.  
Think about it!**

**Enjoy your Reading! May God reveal Himself to you!**

## **Warnings**

**This Book is free of charge and can in no way constitute a source of business.**

**You are free to copy this Book for your preaching, or for distribution, or also for your Evangelism on Social Media, provided that its content is not modified or altered in any way, and that the website [mcreveil.org](http://mcreveil.org) is cited as the source.**

**Woe to you, greedy agents of satan who will try to market these teachings and testimonies!**

**Woe to you, sons of satan who like to publish these teachings and testimonies on Social Media while hiding the address of the website [www.mcreveil.org](http://www.mcreveil.org), or falsifying their contents!**

**Know that you can escape the justice system of men, but you certainly will not escape the judgment of God.**

**You snakes! You brood of vipers! How will you escape being condemned to Hell? Matthew 23:33.**

## **Nota Bene**

**This Book is regularly updated. We recommend that you download the latest version from [www.mcreveil.org](http://www.mcreveil.org).**

# Table of Contents

<b>Warnings .....</b>	<b>3</b>
<b>1- INTRODUCTION .....</b>	<b>10</b>
<b>2- RESEARCH SUMMARY .....</b>	<b>12</b>
<b>2.1- Introduction .....</b>	<b>12</b>
<b>2.2- Apostasy .....</b>	<b>13</b>
<b>2.3- The satanic sects that make their own Bible .....</b>	<b>14</b>
<b>2.4- The Seven Prerequisites .....</b>	<b>14</b>
<b>2.5- What does Jesus say about Himself? .....</b>	<b>16</b>
<b>2.6- These demons who believe to know Jesus more than Jesus Himself .....</b>	<b>16</b>
<b>2.7- The Bible overthrows all lies .....</b>	<b>17</b>
<b>2.8- Biblical supports of demons .....</b>	<b>18</b>
<b>2.9- Some verses commented on by the demons .....</b>	<b>18</b>
<b>2.9.1- Verse commented on N°1 .....</b>	<b>18</b>
<b>2.9.2- Verse commented on N°2 .....</b>	<b>19</b>
<b>2.9.3- Verse commented on N°3 .....</b>	<b>19</b>
<b>2.9.4- Verse commented on N°4 .....</b>	<b>20</b>
<b>2.10- Perfect unity .....</b>	<b>20</b>
<b>2.11- Revelations .....</b>	<b>22</b>
<b>2.12- "It is a mystery that God has revealed to us" .....</b>	<b>22</b>
<b>2.13- These serpents believe to be those to whom the Son would have chosen to reveal all .....</b>	<b>23</b>
<b>2.14- Ask demons for just one verse .....</b>	<b>23</b>
<b>2.15- The arguments of demons .....</b>	<b>24</b>
<b>2.15.1- First argument .....</b>	<b>24</b>
<b>2.15.2- Second argument .....</b>	<b>26</b>
<b>2.15.3- Third argument .....</b>	<b>27</b>
<b>2.15.4- Fourth argument .....</b>	<b>28</b>
<b>2.15.5- Fifth argument .....</b>	<b>30</b>
<b>2.15.6- Sixth argument .....</b>	<b>30</b>
<b>2.15.7- Seventh argument: There is only one God .....</b>	<b>31</b>
<b>2.15.7.1- There are many Gods .....</b>	<b>32</b>
<b>2.15.7.2- Why are there many Gods? .....</b>	<b>33</b>
<b>2.15.7.3- Other Gods besides Jesus .....</b>	<b>33</b>
<b>2.15.7.4- Proof that Moses was God .....</b>	<b>34</b>
<b>2.15.7.5- What about the Lord and the lords? .....</b>	<b>35</b>
<b>2.15.7.6- The Trinity .....</b>	<b>35</b>

2.15.8- Eighth argument: "Functions" and "attributes" of God .....	35
2.15.9- Ninth argument.....	36
2.16- "It poses a problem" .....	36
2.17- "The most cited name of God in the Old Testament" .....	36
2.18- These demons believe they are more intelligent than us, true Children of God .....	37
2.19- Some other verses that overthrow the reasoning of serpents ..	37
2.20- Demons will never teach you the truth.....	38
2.21- These demons want to pervert the Gospel of Christ.....	39
2.22- These demons know more than Jesus .....	39
2.23- God is the Head of Christ .....	40
2.24- The Son subjected to the Father .....	40
2.25- The Scripture cannot be broken.....	40
2.26- The spirit of confusion .....	41
2.27- "A spirit has to come and convince me" .....	41
2.28- Everything that does not come from faith is sin.....	42
2.29- The demons will never believe .....	42
2.30- Blasphemies.....	43
2.31- The non-existence of the Son of God before his coming to earth .....	44
2.31.1- Jesus was at the creation of all things and had even participated in it .....	46
2.31.2- Jesus had been created long before His coming to earth....	46
2.31.3- Before coming to earth to die for us, Jesus was in Heaven with God the Father.....	47
2.31.4- Jesus walked with the people of Israel in the wilderness ..	48
2.31.5- Jesus was before John the Baptist .....	48
2.31.6- Notion of son well established in the Old Testament.....	48
2.32- A doctrine full of contradictions .....	49
2.33- Spirit, soul and body .....	49
2.34- And if the demons were right.....	49
2.35- Let's admit for a few minutes that the demons are right .....	50
2.36- And if Jesus Christ were himself the Holy Spirit!.....	52
2.37- The antichrists .....	54
2.38- Their condemnation was written about long ago .....	55
2.39- They are kept in darkness, bound with everlasting chains.....	56
2.40- Appeal to common sense .....	56
2.41- What to do from now on? .....	56
2.42- Warning .....	58

2.43- Summary of the teaching.....	59
2.44- Conclusion of the Research .....	60
2.45- How is it that the existence of the Father of Jesus Christ becomes a problem? .....	61
2.46- If Jesus Christ has no Father .....	62
2.47- By this you shall know the demons .....	63
2.48- Can there be true Children of God in this sect? .....	65
2.49- Other important points to understand.....	66
2.50- Deliverance of the Children of God stuck in this satanic sect ...	67
2.51- Man is the image of God .....	67
2.52- Difference between Jesus Christ and lucifer.....	69
2.53- Conclusion.....	72
<b>3- RESEARCH.....</b>	<b>74</b>
3.1- First Research: Jesus Speaks of His Father .....	74
3.1.1- Introduction.....	74
3.1.2- Book of Matthew: 44 times .....	74
3.1.3- Book of Mark: 5 times.....	78
3.1.4- Book of Luke: 17 times .....	78
3.1.5- Book of John: 116 times.....	79
3.1.6- Book of Acts of the Apostles: 1 time .....	86
3.1.7- Book of Revelation: 3 times .....	86
3.1.8- Indirect statements .....	86
3.1.9- Conclusion.....	88
3.2- Second Research: Jesus Speaks of His God.....	89
3.2.1- Introduction.....	89
3.2.2- Book of Matthew: 29 times .....	89
3.2.3- Book of Mark: 21 times.....	91
3.2.4- Book of Luke: 31 times .....	93
3.2.5- Book of John: 39 times .....	95
3.2.6- Book of Revelation: 11 times .....	97
3.2.7- Conclusion.....	98
3.3- Third Research: The Disciples Speak of God the Father .....	99
3.3.1- Introduction.....	99
3.3.2- Book of Matthew: 3 times .....	100
3.3.3- Book of Mark: 3 times.....	100
3.3.4- Book of Luke: 14 times .....	100
3.3.5- Book of John: 34 times .....	101
3.3.6- Book of Acts of the Apostles: 47 times .....	103
3.3.7- Book of Romans: 44 times .....	106

<b>3.3.8- Book of 1Corinthians: 22 times .....</b>	<b>109</b>
<b>3.3.9- Book of 2Corinthians: 36 times .....</b>	<b>110</b>
<b>3.3.10- Book of Galatians: 13 times .....</b>	<b>113</b>
<b>3.3.11- Book of Ephesians: 22 times.....</b>	<b>113</b>
<b>3.3.12- Book of Philippians: 15 times .....</b>	<b>115</b>
<b>3.3.13- Book of Colossians: 15 times .....</b>	<b>116</b>
<b>3.3.14- Book of 1Thessalonians: 18 times .....</b>	<b>117</b>
<b>3.3.15- Book of 2Thessalonians: 7 times .....</b>	<b>118</b>
<b>3.3.16- Book of 1Timothy: 6 times.....</b>	<b>119</b>
<b>3.3.17- Book of 2Timothy: 5 times.....</b>	<b>119</b>
<b>3.3.18- Book of Titus: 3 times.....</b>	<b>120</b>
<b>3.3.19- Book of Philemon: 1 time .....</b>	<b>120</b>
<b>3.3.20- Book of Hebrews: 31 times .....</b>	<b>120</b>
<b>3.3.21- Book of James: 4 times.....</b>	<b>123</b>
<b>3.3.22- Book of 1Peter: 15 times .....</b>	<b>123</b>
<b>3.3.23- Book of 2Peter: 3 times .....</b>	<b>124</b>
<b>3.3.24- Book of 1John: 60 times.....</b>	<b>124</b>
<b>3.3.25- Book of 2John: 5 times.....</b>	<b>127</b>
<b>3.3.26- Book of Jude: 3 times .....</b>	<b>127</b>
<b>3.3.27- Book of Revelation: 15 times .....</b>	<b>128</b>
<b>3.3.28- Conclusion.....</b>	<b>129</b>
<b>3.4- Fourth Research: The Disciples Acknowledge that Jesus is the Son of God .....</b>	<b>130</b>
<b>3.4.1- Introduction.....</b>	<b>130</b>
<b>3.4.2- The Bible answers us .....</b>	<b>130</b>
<b>3.4.3- Book of Matthew: 3 times .....</b>	<b>130</b>
<b>3.4.4- Book of Mark: 2 times.....</b>	<b>130</b>
<b>3.4.5- Book of Luke: 3 times .....</b>	<b>131</b>
<b>3.4.6- Book of John: 18 times .....</b>	<b>131</b>
<b>3.4.7- Book of Acts of the Apostles: 11 times .....</b>	<b>132</b>
<b>3.4.8- Book of Romans: 7 times.....</b>	<b>133</b>
<b>3.4.9- Book of 1Corinthians: 2 times .....</b>	<b>134</b>
<b>3.4.10- Book of 2Corinthians: 4 times .....</b>	<b>134</b>
<b>3.4.11- Book of Galatians: 4 times.....</b>	<b>134</b>
<b>3.4.12- Book of Ephesians: 5 times .....</b>	<b>135</b>
<b>3.4.13- Book of Colossians: 3 times .....</b>	<b>135</b>
<b>3.4.14- Book of 1Thessalonians: 2 times .....</b>	<b>135</b>
<b>3.4.15- Book of Hebrews: 11 times .....</b>	<b>136</b>
<b>3.4.16- Book of 1Peter: 1 time .....</b>	<b>137</b>

3.4.17- Book of 2Peter: 1 time .....	137
3.4.18- Book of 1John: 23 times.....	137
3.4.19- Book of 2John: 2 times.....	138
3.4.20- Book of Revelation: 7 times .....	138
3.4.21- Conclusion.....	139
<b>3.5- Fifth Research: Did Jesus Declare that He Was God the Father and the Holy Spirit? .....</b>	<b>140</b>
3.5.1- Introduction.....	140
3.5.2- The Bible answers us .....	140
3.5.3- Book of Matthew .....	140
3.5.4- Book of Mark .....	141
3.5.5- Book of John.....	141
3.5.6- Conclusion.....	141
<b>3.6- Sixth Research: Did the Disciples Declare that Jesus is God the Father and the Holy Spirit? .....</b>	<b>142</b>
3.6.1- Introduction.....	142
3.6.2- The Bible answers us .....	142
3.6.3- Book of Matthew .....	142
3.6.4- Book of Mark .....	142
3.6.5- Book of John.....	142
3.6.6- Book of Acts of the Apostles.....	143
3.6.7- Book of 1Corinthians.....	143
3.6.8- Conclusion.....	143
<b>3.7- Seventh Research: Who is Jesus in the Sight of God the Father and His Angels? .....</b>	<b>144</b>
3.7.1- Introduction.....	144
3.7.2- The Bible answers us .....	144
3.7.3- God the Father acknowledges that He has a Son .....	144
3.7.4- The Angels acknowledge and declare that Jesus is the Son of God .....	145
3.7.5- Conclusion.....	145
<b>3.8- Eight Research: Did satan declare that Jesus is God the Father and the Holy Spirit? .....</b>	<b>146</b>
3.8.1- Introduction.....	146
3.8.2- The Bible answers us .....	146
3.8.3- Book of Matthew .....	146
3.8.4- Book of Luke.....	147
3.8.5- Conclusion.....	147
<b>3.9- Ninth Research: Satan Acknowledges that Jesus is the Son of God.....</b>	<b>148</b>



3.9.1- Introduction.....	148
3.9.2- The Bible answers us .....	148
3.9.3- Book of Matthew .....	148
3.9.4- Book of Luke.....	148
3.9.5- Conclusion.....	148
3.10- Tenth Research: Demons Acknowledge that Jesus is the Son of God.....	149
3.10.1- Introduction.....	149
3.10.2- The Bible answers us .....	149
3.10.3- Book of Matthew .....	149
3.10.4- Book of Mark.....	149
3.10.5- Book of Luke.....	149
3.10.6- Conclusion.....	150
3.11- Eleventh Research: The Bible Speaks of the Right Hand of God .....	151
3.11.1- Introduction.....	151
3.11.2- Old Testament .....	152
3.11.3- New Testament.....	153
3.11.4- Conclusion.....	155
3.12- Twelfth Research: The Number of Verses in the Bible.....	157
3.12.1- Introduction.....	157
3.12.2- Old Testament .....	157
3.12.3- New Testament.....	159
3.12.4- How many chapters and verses are in the Bible?.....	159
3.12.5- How many verses say that Jesus is God the Father and the Holy Spirit?.....	160
3.12.6- The judgment of God based on what is written.....	161
3.12.7- Conclusion.....	162
4- CONCLUSION .....	163
IF I KNEW WHO I WERE.....	164
Invitation .....	165

# IS JESUS CHRIST GOD THE FATHER, THE SON, AND THE HOLY SPIRIT?

(Updated on 01 01 2024)

## 1- INTRODUCTION

With the end times imminent, satan and his agents feel under pressure. They are panicking and are desperately trying to win some true children of God. They are ready to do anything to destroy the Church of Jesus Christ the only true Master and the only true God. To achieve their ends, they have multiplied false doctrines and flooded the Christian milieu with the doctrines of demons.

In recent times, feeling their kingdom collapsing, the strategists of the world of darkness have decided to show great ingenuity in the design of these false doctrines, so as to deceive even some wise and enlightened children of God.

Having realized that their main sect, which is Catholicism, can no longer seduce a single true child of God, having realized that other sects such as the sect of Jehovah's Witnesses, the sect of Seventh-day Adventists, and others, only seduce those who have chosen to deceive themselves, they have found a very effective weapon, a doctrine that pretends to recognize Jesus Christ as God, and as the only true God.

Since all true Children of God know and acknowledge that Jesus Christ is really God, and is the only true God, many fall into the trap of this semblance of gospel of truth, which in reality is the most dangerous venom that satan has ever produced. A satanic doctrine that appears to present Jesus Christ as the only true God, but subtly teaches that Jesus Christ is a common liar, and a mere imposter. Unfortunately, many naive Christians do not realise this deception. They swallow this satanic venom like water, and are possessed by impure spirits that end up holding them captive, and chaining them for Hell.

Faced with this tragedy in which the people of God have suddenly found themselves, we found it imperative to embark on a series of studies in the Bible to expose this big demonic farce. We have chosen to go through the Bible from cover to cover, in order to present to the true people of God, who the real Jesus Christ is.

This teaching entitled ***"Is Jesus Christ God the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit?"*** which we have purposely chosen to deal with in detail without worrying about its length, is a study based on a series of twelve researches and their synthesis. This study aimed to go from Genesis to Revelation through the 64 other books of the Bible, and to determine whether Jesus Christ is at the same time God the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit. It helped us to establish the true identity of Jesus Christ as presented by the Bible, and as presented in the Bible.

The teaching entitled ***"Is Jesus Christ God the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit?"*** is therefore a compilation of 12 researches and a long synthesis of all that the Bible teaches concerning the Jesus-Christ of the Bible, that is to

say the Jesus-Christ of God, that is the true Jesus-Christ, since there is obviously a false jesus-christ in the world of darkness, the one with which the agents of satan succeed in deceiving the ignorant and naive Christians.

At the end of this teaching, God granted us a revelation as great as was the temerity of satan and his agents in their impulse to lead the people of God astray. This great revelation is summed up in a beautiful hymn entitled **"If I knew who I were"**. We hope it will bless you, and open your eyes too.

***Enjoy your Reading!***

## 2- RESEARCH SUMMARY

***This teaching is the summary of the twelve research studies that we carried out to determine if Jesus Christ is at the same time God the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit.***

### 2.1- Introduction

We chose to study this topic in the clearest way possible, given its importance. This topic has become undoubtedly one of the most powerful weapons in the hands of satan today, to deceive many Christians, since this false teaching at first glance, is not different from the normal teaching about the Lord Jesus. As soon as the demons in the flesh that spread this venom say that Jesus Christ is God, everybody say Amen! Since we all know that Jesus is God. But what people do not know is what these serpents hide behind their statement of Jesus Christ is God.

By saying that Jesus Christ is God as we also say, they hide the idea that Jesus Christ is not just God Son of God as the Bible teaches, but that He Himself would in fact be God the Father, and that He would have no Father. You need to go in depth with them in the study to discover the deception. And unfortunately, many Christians who listen to them do not have the necessary discernment to realize that what they are being taught is a satanic doctrine. They are caught in the trap of deception and incantations of these sons of the devil, and believe to find some logic in the explanations given to them.

It is therefore many thousands of Christians who find themselves caught in the trap of this satanic doctrine. And some of them have already absorbed this venom so much that it becomes very difficult to make them see reason, regardless of all the explanations given to them.

Since we know the power of deception, since we do not underestimate the power of the false doctrine, since we must help all those who are in this false doctrine out of ignorance, and since we must condemn satan agents who, having chosen Hell, voluntarily lead astray all those who fall into their traps, we decided to treat this subject in such a way as to silence these serpents once and for all. That is why we first started a series of twelve research studies, before arriving at this teaching, which is nothing other than the summary of these twelve research studies.

**Firstly**, we read through the Bible in search of ***all the times Jesus Christ spoke directly or indirectly of the Father or of His Father, without forgetting the times He was accused of calling God His Father.*** **Secondly**, we started searching for ***all the times Jesus Christ spoke of God or of His God.*** **Thirdly**, we searched for ***all the times the Apostles and other Disciples of Jesus Christ spoke of God the Father different from Jesus Christ the Son of God.***

**Fourthly**, we researched ***all the passages in which the Apostles and other Disciples acknowledged that Jesus is the Son of God.*** **Fifthly**, we went through the Bible in search of ***all the times Jesus Christ admitted that He***

***Himself was God the Father, and all the times Jesus Christ admitted that He Himself was the Holy Spirit.***

***Sixthly***, we also looked for all the passages in which ***the Apostles and the other Disciples declared that Jesus Christ Himself is God the Father and the Holy Spirit. Seventhly***, we went through the Bible in search of ***all the passages in which God the Father acknowledged that He has a Son, and that that Son is Jesus Christ, and of all the passages in which the Angels acknowledged that Jesus Christ is the Son of God.***

***Eighthly***, we looked for ***all the passages in which satan declared that Jesus Himself is God the Father and the Holy Spirit. Ninthly***, we researched ***all the passages in which satan acknowledged that Jesus Christ is the Son of God.***

***Tenthly***, we researched ***all the passages in which demons acknowledged that Jesus Christ is the Son of God. Eleventhly***, we searched for ***all the times the Bible speaks of the right hand of God.***

This eleventh research is justified by the fact that the demons in the flesh, who maintain that Jesus Christ has no Father, and is therefore His own Father and His own God, are stuck and confounded whenever the verses that say that Jesus is seated at the right of God are read to them. Not knowing what else to say to justify their lie, they try to demonstrate that God cannot have a right hand. In order to avoid embarking on vain discussions with them, the best solution we had was to search through the Bible in order to find out what God Himself says about this topic.

***Twelfthly*** and finally, ***we decided to search through the Bible, and count the number of chapters and verses that It contains.***

The reports of these twelve research studies that you will find in chapter 3 of this teaching form the basis of the summary of this study, which, by the grace of God, will put an end to this false debate, once and for all, and which will no longer leave the slightest possibility to agents of Hell to exploit the naivety of ignorant people and the ignorance of all those who make a mistake of not reading the Bible themselves. We decided to make this teaching a comprehensive study. And as you can notice, we have thoroughly searched the entire Bible, looking for any evidence of this doctrine of demons.

## **2.2- Apostasy**

This proliferation of the false doctrine that we are witnessing is the manifestation of apostasy. Madness and blasphemy have already taken the place of the true doctrine of Jesus Christ in the churches. The apostasy that we have mentioned in previous studies results, on the one hand, in sowing great confusion in the minds of those who want to believe in God, so that they may not know where to go or who to follow, and on the other hand, in confirming the prophecy of Malachi 3:18, which says: ***"And you will again see the distinction between the righteous and the wicked, between those who serve God and those who do not."***

The purpose of this big mess created by satan and his agents in the Church of God is to turn all Children of God away from the truth, so that they end up in Hell, or so that they miss the Rapture. Know that it is up to you to do everything possible in order not to fall into the trap that satan and his demons in the flesh that fill the churches today set before you. How should you go about it? By reading the Bible yourself. As long as you act like Catholics, that is, as long as you let the priests and other so-called servants of God read the Bible for you, you will always succumb to their venoms.

### 2.3- The satanic sects that make their own Bible

Flee from all the satanic sects, be it great or small, that have made their own bible. And if you do not have enough discernment to know whether the Church or the group to which you belong is a sect, this is something that will help you. Any group, be it great or small, that makes its own bible under the pretext that they received revelations from God, is a satanic group. It is therefore a satanic sect that you must flee from, if you value your salvation. ***Know firmly that God will never again ask anyone to make a new Bible.***

Any so-called revelation allegedly received from God asking a man or a group of men to alter the Bible, or to write it again, or to revise it, regardless of the word they use, is a satanic revelation schemed from the world of darkness. You should never be distracted or impressed by these revelations and their many so-called confirmations. ***God will never again ask anyone today to make a new Bible.*** Do not fall into the deception of the end times. Lucifer has sent its formidable agents on earth, to recruit a maximum of people to Hell. Be careful!

***The reason that drives these demons in the flesh to make a new bible is their inability to justify by the Holy Bible, the false doctrine that satan asked them to convey.*** In other words, when they find themselves unable to justify their false doctrine by the Holy Bible, they find themselves forced to change the Bible, and to make their own bible. Know that no agent of satan, no matter their degree of intelligence and cunning, can succeed in justifying their false doctrine while using the Holy Bible. That is why it is always very easy to silence these demons whenever we find ourselves in a discussion using the Holy Bible, and abiding by the instructions that the Lord has given us in the teaching entitled ***"Prerequisites to Bible Studies"***, which can be found on the website [www.mcreveil.org](http://www.mcreveil.org), and an extract of which can be found below.

The Lord tells us in Luke 21:15 ***"For I will give you words and wisdom that none of your adversaries will be able to resist or contradict."*** And in Titus 1:10-11 ***"For there are many insubordinate, both idle talkers and deceivers, especially those of the circumcision, <sup>11</sup>whose mouths must be stopped, who subvert whole households, teaching things which they ought not, for the sake of dishonest gain."***

### 2.4- The Seven Prerequisites

The only secret to catch the agents of satan whose mission is to turn you away from the word of God is the one we give you below. It is about these seven prerequisites that must be imposed on them before any debate, or before any

discussion, when you think that that debate or that discussion may bear some fruits. Never accept any debate or discussion with demons who have changed the Bible. And if you want to discuss with them, demand that they set aside their false bible, and they should use the real Bible during your debate.

To avoid falling into the trap of the sons of perdition, before getting involved in any Bible study with people, before opening any discussion or any debate around the Bible, you must first of all agree on the following seven (7) prerequisites:

**1- Agree on the fact that the Bible is the Word of God.**

**2- Agree on the fact that the Bible alone is the Word of God, which means that no other book, no other document, no other manuscript, or even a comment in the Bible, represents the Word of God.**

**3- Agree on the fact that God is the sole author of the Bible, that is, in the Bible, there is no word of Peter, or of John, or of Paul, etc.**

**4- Agree on the fact that the whole Bible speaks to us, that is, there is no message in the Bible to the Corinthians, or to the Ephesians, etc.**

**5- Agree on the fact that the true Bible left at our disposal by God, contains 66 books. These 66 books must have the names of the books of the Holy Bible that we know, and be listed in the normal order of books as presented in the Holy Bible.**

**6- Agree on the fact that the Bible is true.**

**7- Agree on the fact that what is not written, does not concern us.**

These seven prerequisites must **absolutely** be respected if you do not want to turn your Bible study or your sharing into a simple distraction. And do not forget that you should never go beyond what is written, according to the commandment of the Lord in **1Corinthians 4:6** "Now, brothers, I have applied these things to myself ..., so that you may learn ... **not go beyond what is written...**"

With the reports of all the twelve research studies that we have undertaken, it will now be easier to answer the question that was put to us, namely: **Is Jesus Christ God the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit?** Or in other words, **is the Bible false?** If the question were so simply put to us, the answer would have just been easy.

If we have spent more time than expected on this research, it is either because the question was badly put to us, or because we had misunderstood the question. For the topic we are looking at is actually this one: **Is the Bible false?** Getting through this question would have taken us less time. So let's be watchful the next times.

Since we are here arguing and quibbling over the person of Jesus, why don't we ask Him for His opinion? Why not consult Jesus Himself, so He can tell us who He is, or who He is not?

## 2.5- What does Jesus say about Himself?

Jesus has never claimed to be God the Father, He has never ventured into it. To anyone who would listen to Him, He had spoken enough of His father, and of the mission that His Father entrusted to Him, as we have demonstrated in the First Research. He had also spoken enough of His God, thus confessing that He has a God, to Whom He is subjected to. That is what you discover in the Second Research.

Jesus never dared to say that He is the Holy Spirit. He made no secret of Who He is. He said to anyone who would listen to Him that He is the Son of God. ***He clearly distinguished Himself from God the Father and from the Holy Spirit***, as the passages below confirm:

**Matthew 3:16-17** *"When He had been baptized, Jesus came up immediately from the water; and behold, the heavens were opened to Him, and He saw the Spirit of God descending like a dove and alighting upon Him. <sup>17</sup>And suddenly a voice came from heaven, saying, "This is My beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased."*

**John 12:27-28** *"Now my heart is troubled, and what shall I say? 'Father, save me from this hour'? No, it was for this very reason I came to this hour. <sup>28</sup>Father, glorify your name!" Then a voice came from heaven, "I have glorified it, and will glorify it again."*

**John 14:26** *"But the Comforter, the Holy Spirit, whom the Father will send in My name, He shall teach you all things, and will bring to your remembrance all the things which I have said to you."*

**John 15:26** *"But when the Comforter is come, whom I will send to you from the Father, the Spirit of truth who goes forth from with the Father, he shall bear witness concerning me."*

**Acts 2:32-33** *"God has raised this Jesus to life, and we are all witnesses of the fact. <sup>33</sup>Exalted to the right hand of God, He has received from the Father the promised Holy Spirit and has poured out what you now see and hear."*

**Acts 10:38** *"How God anointed Jesus of Nazareth with the Holy Spirit and power, and how he went around doing good and healing all who were under the power of the devil, because God was with him."*

## 2.6- These demons who believe to know Jesus more than Jesus Himself

How is it that Jesus from His own mouth and to the best of His knowledge and belief tells us who He is, and that some demons try to contradict Him? Does it sound logical to you that some demons in the flesh know Jesus more than Jesus Himself? Why should we waste time discussing the identity of a person while the person is present and can speak to us about Himself? Why must we go through unnecessary acrobatics to discover someone who makes no secret of his identity? Jesus has never hidden His identity, and He has never lied about His identity. What can therefore justify a debate about His identity?



Beloved, remember that the mission of the demons is not only to oppose God, to blaspheme and to contradict God, but it is also to turn Children of God away from the truth, or failing that, to distract the Children of God. Therefore, ensure that you do not allow yourselves to be distracted by these demons who believe in knowing Jesus better than Jesus Himself.

## 2.7- The Bible overthrows all lies

It emerges from the research studies that we have just undertaken that God has left no possibility to the demons to tell a lie in His name, using the Bible. The Bible confounds any lie, and clearly exposes the agents of satan. That is why you have hundreds of passages in the Bible that tell you clearly that Jesus Christ is the Son of God, and you find none that tells you that Jesus Christ is God the Father and the Holy Spirit.

It's just pathetic. We have identified more than a thousand passages in the Bible that say that Jesus Christ is the Son of God, and we have not found a single passage that says that Jesus Christ is God the Father and the Holy Spirit. Not a single one. In turn, we consulted God the Father, Jesus Christ Himself, God's Angels, the Apostles, the Prophets, and the other Servants of God in the Bible, the devil, and even the demons in spirit, as you can verify by reading the different research studies that we have undertaken. None of them says that Jesus Christ is God the Father and the Holy Spirit. None of them. Yet, they all clearly say that Jesus Christ is the Son of God. Isn't it wonderful? Hallelujah!

Who can challenge God successfully? Who can fight God and defeat Him? Who can overthrow God? Who can succeed in embarrassing God? Who can claim any victory over God? Who can be wiser than God? Who can be compared with the Lord? Isn't our God wonderful? Isn't our God awesome? Hallelujah!

Let us bless God, beloved, let us bless Him with all our heart. Praise the Lord, praise Him for His greatness, for His love, for His might, and for His faithfulness. At this level, I can't help singing joyfully this beautiful chorus that the Lord laid in my heart while I was writing this teaching. This chorus says: **Let us praise the Lord!**

### Let us praise the Lord

Let us praise the Lord,  
Let's praise Him for His greatness,  
The living God is worthy of  
Praises, for ever and ever.

Let us praise the Lord,  
Let's praise Him for His power,  
The Almighty is worthy of  
Praises, for ever and ever.

Let us praise the Lord,  
Let's praise Him for His goodness,  
The Prince of Peace is worthy of  
Praises, for ever and ever.

Let us praise the Lord,  
Let's praise Him for His great love,  
The God of love is worthy of  
Praises, for ever and ever.

Let us praise the Lord,  
Let's praise Him for He is God,  
The God of gods is worthy of  
Praises, for ever and ever.

Let us praise the Lord,  
Praise Him for His mighty deeds,  
The Holy One is fearful in  
Praises, for ever and ever.

Let us praise the Lord,  
Praise Him for His faithfulness,  
The faithful God is fearful in  
Praises, forever and ever.

## 2.8- Biblical supports of demons

Beloved, the few verses that these demons give to support their blasphemy are all in the study entitled ***Is Jesus Christ God?*** that we carried out recently. There is nothing new. They do not have a single verse that says that ***Jesus Christ is God the Father and the Holy Spirit***, as you had already expected. Therefore, I found it pointless making this study longer with the same verses that we have cited enough in the recent study.

Nevertheless, let me give you some of the verses that they have commented on, so that you may discover yourself the art of the great manipulation of these agents of hell.

## 2.9- Some verses commented on by the demons

Here are a few passages that those demons that are short of arguments put forward to justify their blasphemy. Since they must give the impression that their satanic doctrine has a biblical basis, they go in the Bible and take some verses out of context, in order to support their folly. They cite, among other things, the following passages:

### 2.9.1- Verse commented on N°1

**Isaiah 9:6** *"For unto us a Child is born, unto us a Son is given; and the government will be upon His shoulder. And His name will be called Wonderful, Counsellor, Mighty God, Everlasting Father, Prince of Peace."*

**Here's their comment:** *"If we admit that the son who is born (Jesus Christ) is our Counsellor, is Wonderful, is the Mighty God, is the Prince of peace, we must also admit that he is the Everlasting Father as specified in the above verse."*

Beloved, this is plain and simple ramblings. We have never said that Jesus Christ was not the Everlasting Father. Therefore, let these demons not bring us to a debate that does not exist. We have always believed, and we will believe until the end, that the word of God is true. **Besides, this is the reason why we do not make a new Bible.** We believe in the veracity of the one that already exists.

Since we believe that the Bible is true, we also believe, and naturally, that Jesus Christ is the Everlasting Father. What we say, support, and defend, however, is that Jesus Christ is not God the Father. Let us not allow the demons to run away from the real debate. Let them give us a single verse that says that Jesus Christ is God the Father.

### 2.9.2- Verse commented on N°2

**Matthew 28:19** *"Therefore go and make disciples of all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit."*

**Here's their comment:** *"We see the command of the Lord (an order) to his Apostles. According to Acts 2:38 'Peter replied, repent and be baptized, every one of you, in the name of Jesus Christ for the forgiveness of your sins. And you will receive the gift of the Holy Spirit.' We see an actual obedience to the command of the Lord, and not a recitation or repetition of the command. Moreover, Jesus giving the command said 'in the name' which is in the singular, that is, common to the Father, the son and the Holy Spirit." That's what the demons say.*

Beloved, as you can see, lucifer has totally eaten away at the head of its agents. They do not understand a thing, and can no longer understand anything. It's really pitiful!

In their own words, in Matthew 28:19 it is a command (an order) that the Lord gave to His Apostles. But still according to them, Apostle Peter has chosen either to oppose this command of Jesus, or to disobey Him, or to correct the mistakes of Jesus, because Jesus may have made a mistake by using the expression ***"In the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit."***

What else can I tell you? What else can I demonstrate in order for you to understand that when Jesus called these people son of the devil, He was not insulting them? Do you need efforts to understand that if the sacrifice of Jesus could not save these people, it is not any demonstration on our part, albeit powerful and absolutely convincing, that would save them? If these people agree to be saved, who then will be in Hell, beloved? ***Hasn't the Lord made everything for its purpose, even the wicked for the day of evil?*** Proverbs 16:4

This aspect being one of the points that these wicked use to justify what they call "baptism in the name of jesus", we have dealt with it in detail in a separate teaching, entitled ***"The Formula of Water Baptism"***, which you can find on the website mcreveil.org. While waiting to read this teaching, know that when these demons talk about the "baptism in the name of jesus", they speak about their jesus, and not about **our Lord and Master Jesus Christ**.

### 2.9.3- Verse commented on N°3

**John 14:16** *"And I will pray the Father, and He shall give you another Comforter, that He may abide with you for ever."*

**Here's their comment:** *"The Lord Jesus declares that He will be with his disciples always as mentioned in Matthew 28:20 'teaching them to observe all things that I have commanded you; and lo, I am with you always, even to the end of the age.' Therefore the comforter that was promised is this same Jesus, that is the Holy Spirit." That is what the demons say.*

Beloved, these agents of satan are innate sophists. They master the art of sophistry. They have deception in the blood. But even when they are exposed, rather than repenting, they prefer to drink their shame to the dregs. It is done!

They do all this macabre demonstration with a lot of incantations, and those who do not have the Spirit of God, unfortunately succumb to their big deceptions. We have shown you throughout this study that the whole argument of these demons is totally meaningless and without any substance, and can only deceive those who do not read their Bible, and all those who have twisted heart and corrupt mind.

#### 2.9.4- Verse commented on N°4

**John 10:30** *"I and the Father are one."*

**Here's their comment:** *"It is a perfect, complete and total unity." And they associate with that Colossians 2:9 which says: "For in Christ all the fullness of the Deity lives in bodily form."*

#### 2.10- Perfect unity

What often creates problems for people of corrupt minds and spirit, who easily accept the false doctrine according to which Jesus would Himself be at the same time God the Father and the Holy Spirit, is the fact that they do not understand the **perfect unity** that exists between God the Father and the Son. This unity is yet well established in the Bible, and it is not limited only to God the Father and the Son. It even extends to mortals. This is the case of a man and a woman when they are married as the Bible teaches in Genesis 2:24; this is also the case of David and Jonathan that we find in 1Samuel 18; this is equally the case of the first brethren in Acts 4; this is also what the Lord reveals to us in John 17.

Therefore, if the perfect unity according to the demons means that in order for Jesus and His Father to be one, it must be about the same person and not about two or more persons, let them explain to us the following passages:

**Genesis 2:24** *"That is why a man leaves his father and mother and is united to his wife, and they become one flesh."* This is a perfect unity between a man and a woman.

**1Samuel 18:1; 3** *"... Jonathan became one in spirit with David, and **he loved him as himself**. ... <sup>3</sup>And Jonathan made a covenant with David because **he loved him as himself**."* This is a perfect unity between two friends.

**John 17:11; 18; 21-23** *"<sup>11</sup> I will remain in the world no longer, but they are still in the world, and I am coming to you. Holy Father, protect them by the power of your name - the name you gave me - so that they may be **one as we are one**. ... <sup>18</sup>As You sent me into the world, I also have sent them into the world. ... <sup>21</sup>**That they all may be one**, as You, Father, are in Me, and I in You; that **they also may be one in us**, that the world may believe that You sent Me. <sup>22</sup>I have given them the glory that you gave me, **that they may be one as we are one**. <sup>23</sup>**I in them, and You in Me; that they may be made perfect in one**, and that the world may know that You have sent Me, and have loved them as You have loved Me."*

This is a clear example of a perfect unity between God the Father and Christ, between Christ and the Disciples, between God the Father, Christ and the Disciples, between the Disciples themselves.

**Ephesians 5:31-32** *"For this reason a man will leave his father and mother and be united to his wife, and the two will become one flesh."* <sup>32</sup>*This is a profound mystery - but I am talking about **Christ and the Church**.*

This is a perfect unity between a man and a woman, and between Christ and the Church.

**Ephesians 4:1-3; 11-15** *"As a prisoner for the Lord, then, I urge you to live a life worthy of the calling you have received. <sup>2</sup>Be completely humble and gentle; be patient, bearing with one another in love. <sup>3</sup>Make every effort to keep the unity of the Spirit through the bond of peace. ... <sup>11</sup>It was he who gave some to be apostles, some to be prophets, some to be evangelists, and some to be pastors and teachers, <sup>12</sup>to prepare God's people for works of service, so that the body of Christ may be built up <sup>13</sup>until we all reach unity in the faith and in the knowledge of the Son of God and become mature, attaining to the whole measure of the fullness of Christ. <sup>14</sup>Then we will no longer be infants, tossed back and forth by the waves, and blown here and there by every wind of teaching and by the cunning and craftiness of men in their deceitful scheming. <sup>15</sup>Instead, speaking the truth in love, we will in all things grow up into him who is the Head, that is, Christ."*

This is a perfect unity among the Disciples, that is, a perfect unity between the members of the Body of Christ, which is the Church of Jesus Christ.

As a Church, God has called us all to unity, and to a perfect unity. It is for this reason that He blessed the Church with Apostles, Prophets, Evangelists, Pastors and Teachers; it is to get the Church to perfect unity. The work of the Holy Spirit and of the true Servants of God is to lead the Church of Christ, that is, the true Children of God to become one, as Christ and His Father are one.

**Acts 4:32** *"Now the multitude of those who believed were of one heart and one soul; neither did anyone say that any of the things he possessed was his own, but they had all things in common."*

This is a perfect unity among the Disciples.

Beloved, I have just shown you several other cases of perfect unity in the Bible. If we stick to the ravings of these sons of the evil one, Christ and the Disciples would be one and the same person, man and woman once married would be one and the same person, the Disciples among themselves would be one and the same person, and even God the Father, and we, Disciples of Jesus Christ, would be one and the same person. This is how far the demons are ready to go, because they are determined to oppose God.

Since the perfect unity according to the demons means that in order for Jesus and His Father to be one, it must be about the same person and not about two or more persons, you therefore understand that according to these demons, God the Father, Jesus Christ and the whole Church, are all one and the same person.

According to these demons, Jesus Christ is therefore himself God the Father, and we, the Disciples of Jesus, are ourselves Jesus Christ, and indirectly, we ourselves are God the Father. If the doctrine of these demons were true, David and Jonathan would be one and the same person. This is the so-called mystery that some demons in the flesh believe to be the only ones to solve.

### 2.11- Revelations

I have already warned you against these people who only talk about revelations every time. Know that these are sorcerers. It is just because they cannot support their blasphemies by the Bible that they are compelled to tell people that it is by revelations that they have received their lies. Know that such revelations cannot come from our God and Father Jesus Christ. No revelation from the Lord can be contrary to the Bible. We acknowledge that our God is a God of revelations, and we acknowledge that our God regularly gives us revelations. But none of these revelations will contradict God; none will find God a liar. All must be justified by the Bible.

### 2.12- "It is a mystery that God has revealed to us"

This is the demons' last 'entrenchment'. Whenever they feel cornered by the truth and have run out of their ridiculous arguments, they tell you that their satanic doctrine is in fact a mystery that God has revealed to them, and that that is why you do not find it in the Bible. This is exactly what it means: God has kept secret a mystery since the creation, and has chosen neither to reveal it to His Prophets from of Old, nor to His Apostles and Disciples of the New Covenant, nor to His other Servants who have served Him for almost 2000 years of the Church history, nor even to all His true Children who are serving Him at present with great zeal and commitment.

God would have thought it best to reveal this mystery only to a small group of demons in the flesh. He would have thus hidden a mystery for more than 6000 years only to reveal it to a small group of vipers who would be the only ones to have the privilege to go to Heaven. And what is yet strange in this argument of the demons, is that it is for them only that this mystery was reserved. **No one else can have access to this mystery, since it is not written anywhere, and will never again be written**, because God will no longer write a new Bible. Therefore, as it were, God has set a real trap for all His Servants of the Old as well as the New Testament, and for all those who will believe in Him through the Gospel of the first Apostles.

Understand then very well that according to the doctrine of these demons, all the Apostles of Jesus Christ are in Hell, all those who followed them are in Hell, and all of us who believe in their Gospel will go to Hell, because we continue to teach what is written, rather than teaching mysteries that are not written anywhere, and that will never be written. We will all go to Hell beloved, because we believe, support and teach that Jesus Christ is the Son of God in accordance with the Bible, whilst in reality, according to the doctrine of demons, He would be God the Father and the Holy Spirit.

If this so-called mystery was really a mystery hidden since the creation and reserved only for those who will be on earth at this end times, it would have

been understandable. But even those who live on earth presently unfortunately do not have access to this mystery. It is not written anywhere. It is therefore a mystery, which the revelation does not depend on Covenants, or times, or generations. It is just an exclusive that God would have reserved for some sons of the devil, for some dangerous demons in the flesh. Hallelujah!

### **2.13- These serpents believe to be those to whom the Son would have chosen to reveal all**

This is the verse that these demons use to support their pretence and their blasphemy: **Matthew 11:27** *"All things have been delivered to Me by My Father, and no one knows the Son except the Father. Nor does anyone know the Father except the Son, and **the one to whom the Son wills to reveal Him.**"* And this is how they explain this verse:

They say that no one knows the Son except the Father; and no one either knows the Father except the Son and the one to whom the Son chooses to reveal Him. This means according to them, that their doctrine is nowhere in the Bible, and that only those to whom the Son will choose to reveal this doctrine can have it. And to them, the Son has chosen to reveal the mystery hidden between the Father and the Son, whereas to us the Son has chosen not to reveal this. That is why we do not understand.

According to the teaching of these demons, Heaven would be so small that the Son is compelled to hide the truth from everybody, including His Prophets and His Apostles, lest there would be snarl-up or promiscuity in Heaven, if some other people apart from these demons could manage to get there. God who knows that He only has a few places in Heaven to welcome people would, according to the demons, have opted for a selection policy seriously opaque. He had to find a weird method to exclude everyone, including His most faithful Servants the Prophets and the Apostles. There would only be in Heaven a few spaces for this small bunch of serpents.

Beloved, it is really appalling. That's how far the deception has reached. Unfortunately, you have many people who believe in this kind of nonsense. ***One must have truly sold his soul to satan to believe that what is written in black and white in the Bible is false, and that it is what is not written anywhere that is true.*** None of these wicked will have excuses. Whether these demons who convey this satanic doctrine, or those who believe in it. One does not need a great discernment to detect this kind of blasphemy.

### **2.14- Ask demons for just one verse**

Beloved, this is another proof that the word of God is true, and that there are people that you will never get out of Hell. The simplest thing in the world to do is what we are asking these supposedly enlightened people who allegedly want to save us. We only ask them for **one clear verse** that supports their doctrine. We do not want two verses. We only want one. One verse that says that Jesus Christ is God the Father and the Holy Spirit. The easiest thing to do for any true Christian or for any teacher of the Bible, that they all claim to be, is to produce at least one verse that supports their doctrine.

The only thing you will do from now on with the demons who tell you that Jesus Christ is God the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit, is to ask them the verse that says so. Since you yourselves already know that Jesus Christ is the Son, **ask them for just one verse** that says: "Jesus Christ is **God the Father**", "Jesus Christ is the **Holy Spirit**". If they do not provide you with such a verse, chase those demons away and prohibit them formally from talking again about their god at your side.

Do not allow them to quote the verse of Isaiah 9:6 that says: *"For unto us a Child is born, ... His name will be called Wonderful, Counsellor, Mighty God, Everlasting Father, Prince of Peace."* This verse instead says that Jesus Christ is Everlasting Father. But it does not say that Jesus Christ is God the Father. Know once and for all that we have never said that Jesus was not Everlasting Father. Jesus is Everlasting Father, the Bible says it clearly, and we accept and approve it. But Jesus Christ is not God the Father, and He is not the Holy Spirit. If these demons want to contradict us, let them give us **just one** verse that says that Jesus Christ is God the Father and the Holy Spirit.

But while they are unable to provide us with this one verse that we ask them, they multiply false arguments to confuse those who fall into the trap of listening to them.

## 2.15- The arguments of demons

I reveal to you below some arguments that these serpents give to support their folly:

### 2.15.1- First argument

***"The Existence of the Son (the Son in the mind of God). Let's first of all recall that in **Romans 4:17**, it is said "As it is written: "I have made you a father of many nations." He is our father in the sight of God, in whom he believed - the God who gives life to the dead **and calls things that are not as though they were.**"*** This is the first argument of the demons.

After reading this argument, I did not understand the cunning of satan that was hidden in it. I spent several minutes pondering this, trying to figure out how this verse could serve the cause of these demons, and I found no answer. I tried to find the connection that could exist between this verse of Romans 4:17 and the study that we were doing, and I found nothing. Having found nothing, I appealed to all the other children of God I had involved in the research that led to this synthesis to help me understand how this verse answered our question. They too did not see the relevance of this argument.

Although neither of us could find anything wrong with this verse quoted by the demons, I was convinced that there was something fishy going on. With the little knowledge I have of satan and his agents, I knew that the use of this verse of Romans 4:17 by these demons was not trivial. In doing so, I asked the brethren to continue to meditate on this verse in prayer, so that the secret of these demons would be revealed to us. I had to pray to ask the Lord to reveal to me what was hidden in this verse.



The next day, while I was meditating on this study and rereading this teaching, it was then that the Lord revealed to me the cunning of these sons of the evil one hidden behind their use of Romans 4:17. So I immediately called back the brethren to whom I had appealed, asking them to stop suffering. I told them that the Lord had revealed to me the great cunning of these demons.

Here is actually what this argument of these agents of Hell hides: Since they know that they will never find in the Holy Bible a single verse or a single passage to justify their lie and their blasphemy, they want to find in this verse, a reason to accuse God and to find Him unreliable. Therefore, the part they have underlined in the verse is what seems to be their Joker, that is, the ultimate element behind which they can shut themselves away in order not to acknowledge defeat.

Here is the part highlighted in the verse: ***".... and calls things that are not as though they were."*** In fact, they want to accuse God of lies and inconsistencies. They want to demonstrate that God contradicts himself. So here's the cunning of the demons hidden behind their use of this verse in this context. They are trying to remind us that *God calls things that are not as though they were*, a way of telling us that God is a kid who says things that make no sense, and who even tells stories that do not exist.

Conclusion, according to these demons, we must not fall into the trap of believing without discernment in everything that God says, because in His fantasies, He invents things that do not exist. We must always know that God at times goes off His head and lets out of His mouth a few uncontrolled words. Through all of this, these demons are trying to tell us that Jesus speaks of His Father as if He were, whereas He is not. Jesus is thus *calling things that are not as though they were*, *He is talking of His Father and of His God as if He were*, whereas He is not.

This is the cunning of the demons analysed in details and laid bare. That is what is hidden behind their use of the verse of Romans 4:17. This is how far the serpents can go to provoke the wrath of God. That's what these sons of perdition are capable of. And if you do not have enough discernment, you can easily fall into their trap.

For these agents of Hell, whenever they tell you one thing that you cannot find anywhere in the Bible, simply know that that thing is part of the things that God forgot to mention. And whenever something is clearly written in the Bible but that they do not want to accept it, you must understand that this thing is part of the things that God *has called as though they were*, whereas *they are not*. And whenever they make an inconsistent statement, just know that it is God who is inconsistent. Hallelujah!

That's how far the sons of the devil can take the blasphemy. Yes, it's with the greatest of ease and effortlessly that these serpents insult God and provoke Him to anger. Those who follow them, or who agree with them, or who join them, openly or secretly, must clearly know what awaits them in the coming days. None of them will escape the great wrath of God, and none of them can escape the fury and the judgment of God.

Let's continue with the review of this first argument. In their remarks, there is another element that concerns us. These sons of the wicked one tell us about the Existence of the Son in the Mind of God. Apparently, these demons even have the ability to read the mind of God. What God has not said, but had in "mind", these demons have had the possibility to know it. That is why they can "reveal" to us ***the Existence of the Son in the Mind of God***. You then understand that, indeed, they aren't just anybody, to borrow this colloquial language. They are more intelligent and wiser than God.

### 2.15.2- Second argument

Here's another excerpt from their arguments: ***"Hebrews 6:13 (If Jesus as Son is the God of the Old Testament, the Lord, why did He not swear by the name of His Father who is greater than Him as written in John 14:28???)"***

Now, let me show you how these demons are full of nerve. This is what **Hebrews 6:13** says ***"When God made his promise to Abraham, since there was no one greater for him to swear by, he swore by himself."*** And this is what **John 14:28** says ***"You heard me say, 'I am going away and I am coming back to you.' If you loved me, you would be glad that I am going to the Father, for the Father is greater than I."***

Watch carefully the reaction of these sorcerers. They collate the two verses, and here are the questions they ask God who is the sole author of these two verses. ***"Jesus, if your Father really exists, and if he is really greater than you as you claim and as you seem to affirm in John 14:28, why did you not swear by him according to Hebrews 6:13? Don't you see, Jesus, that you are contradicting yourself? Can't you see that you're really incoherent and inconsistent in your remarks? Aren't we right to say to anyone who wants to listen to us, that you have no father? If you are not that coherent, how then do you expect us to take your words seriously? Although you have repeatedly said that you have a father, we have good reason to doubt."***

Beloved, these are some of the questions that these demons who are certainly greater and stronger than God, ask the Lord. When you hear them ask such questions, do not think that their questions are addressed to us. We are not their target; since they know very well that we have neither written the verse of Hebrews 6:13, nor that of John 14:28, nor any other Bible verse. It is therefore to God that they ask their questions. And woe to God if He does not answer them. The spirit speaking through them is the same who spoke through their demons colleagues in **Matthew 27:40**. ***"... You who are going to destroy the temple and build it in three days, save yourself! Come down from the cross, if you are the Son of God!"***

What we have to do at our level, is to send them back to God so they can ask their questions directly to Him, without going through us. We are not God's questions collectors. God has not assigned us to collect on His behalf the questions that demons have for Him, and the demons on their part have not employed us for that service. Let us ask them to go and ask their questions directly to whom it may concern.

***Dear demons, go directly to God to ask your questions. Since you are greater than Him, since you are stronger than Him, and since you were there the day He created the Heavens and the earth, and since you might have even helped Him to create everything that He created, He must certainly be obliged to answer you. Can He do otherwise?***

Beloved, the spirit that is behind this affront to God, is the same spirit that one day, after we had read the passage of Acts 7:55-56, which says: ***"But Stephen, full of the Holy Spirit, looked up to heaven and saw the glory of God, and Jesus standing at the right hand of God. "Look," he said, "I see heaven open and the Son of Man standing at the right hand of God"***, asked us in a serious and quite derisive tone how a God can have a right hand.

"A God with a right hand?" he exclaimed. "How could you say such things?" he hammered. Unfortunately it is always to us, poor Children of God, that these spirits come with questions meant for God. Are we God? Or are we able to answer such questions in the place of God?

These are the kind of questions that these evil spirits ask God. For them, God is so ignorant that He says things that make no sense. *"How can a God we thought was intelligent talk such nonsense? How can your God say that He has a right hand? And unfortunately, you also believe in this kind of nonsense. Even if your God drivels from time to time and says the most outrageous things, you at least should be able to make Him see reason."* This is the advice that these serpents give us.

Nevertheless, know that there is an important element hidden behind these shameless questions that these sons of perdition ask God. Being completely at a loss, they are desperately looking for a few real passages to support their blasphemy, but they cannot find anything, and they will not find any. This is another proof of the greatness of God. God is above the demons, even if the latter never like to admit it.

### **2.15.3- Third argument**

This is a conclusion that these demons draw: *"The word son derives from begetting, that is, someone who has a beginning but we cannot talk about 'Everlasting Son' because the son has a beginning, but everlasting has neither beginning nor end."*

As you can see, these demons are much wiser and more intelligent than God is, and they want to prove it. You should bear in mind that the demons know that they have nothing to lose. That is why they freely mock God; that is why they are not afraid to oppose God and contradict Him.

I have already told you that the demons are at war with God, and they only have one mission, that of fighting against God with determination, that of contradicting Him, and trying to embarrass Him. Let me give you another proof. God Himself says:

**Psalm 2:7** *"... The Lord has said to Me, **You are My Son, today I have begotten You.**"*

**Hebrews 1:5** *"For to which of the angels did **God** ever say, **"You are my Son; today I have become your Father"**? Or again, I will be his Father, and he will be my Son?"*

**Hebrews 5:4-5** *"And no man takes this honour to himself, but he who is called by **God**, just as Aaron was. <sup>5</sup>So also Christ did not glorify Himself to become High Priest, but it was He who said to Him: **"You are My Son, today I have begotten You."***

**1John 5:1** *"Whoever believes that Jesus is the Christ is born of **God**, and everyone who loves **Him who begot** also loves **him who is begotten of Him.**"*

**Acts 13:33** *"God has fulfilled this for us their children, in that He has raised up Jesus. As it is also written in the second Psalm: **You are My Son, today I have begotten You.**"*

**Revelation 3:14** *"And to the angel of the church of the Laodiceans write, 'These things says the Amen, the Faithful and True Witness, **the Beginning of the creation of God.**'"*

From the verses that you have just read, God Himself tells you that Jesus Christ is His begotten Son. And the demons make fun of that, and ask God how can an everlasting son be begotten. Thus, they find God to be so ignorant and so inconsistent in His words. On the one hand God said that his son is everlasting, on the other he says that he begot that son. What inconsistency! What a mess! Those are the words of the antichrists.

The great wickedness of these demons is what always revolts us. Since they know that they are lost, they make all their efforts to lead others astray. They set traps for the naïve to deceive them and win them over to their false doctrines. They are trying every day to turn people away voluntarily and consciously from the doctrine of the Lord. They pretend to be naïve, they play the innocent, and slyly turn away many of those who want to follow the Lord in the truth.

But this teaching that we have just done will put an end to the cunning of these demons, once and for all. The teaching is now so clear that only other demons would follow these serpents. No true child of God, after all of this demonstration that we have done in the name of Jesus Christ the only Son of the Father, will fall into the trap of these agents of Hell. Only their demons colleagues will follow them from now on. Praise be to the Lord!

#### 2.15.4- Fourth argument

This is another argument of these demons. They say that **"Jesus Christ spoke about the Father in figurative language."** In connection with that, they quote the verses of **John 16:25-27**. Let's read this verse:

**John 16:25-27** *"These things I have spoken to you in figurative language; **but the time is coming when I will no longer speak to you in figurative language**, but I will tell you plainly about the Father. <sup>26</sup>"In that day you will ask in My name, and I do not say to you that I shall pray the Father for you; <sup>27</sup>"for the Father Himself loves you, because you have loved Me, and have believed that I came forth from God."*

This is the passage to which demons want to cling to justify the fact that they have no verse to support their blasphemy. They want to imply that if Jesus never said that He is God the Father and the Holy Spirit, it is because He spoke in figurative language.

Beloved, these people are in total confusion. Let us examine this word of Jesus in verse 25, and the reaction of the Disciples in verse 29. ***"His disciples said to Him, "See, now You are speaking plainly, and using no figure of speech!"***

**Firstly:** The disciples themselves give us to understand that the figurative language that Jesus talks about in verse 25, was not related to what Jesus had just told them. The Lord spoke to them plainly, and they clearly understood what the Lord was telling them. The disciples therefore never had the slightest doubt about the person of the Father of Jesus.

**Secondly:** We know that even when the Lord spoke in parables, it was when He was speaking to the crowd. But with His disciples, He spoke freely, as corroborated by the verses below, which also show you that this other argument of the demons does not stand.

**Matthew 13:10-11** *"And the disciples came and said to Him, "Why do You speak to them in parables?" <sup>11</sup>He answered and said to them, "Because it has been given to you to know the mysteries of the kingdom of heaven, but to them it has not been given."*

**Mark 4:10-11** *"But when He was alone, those around Him with the twelve asked Him about the parable. <sup>11</sup>And He said to them, "To you it has been given to know the mystery of the kingdom of God; but to those who are outside, all things come in parables."*

**Mark 4:33-34** *"And with many such parables He spoke the word to them as they were able to hear it. <sup>34</sup>But without a parable He did not speak to them. And when they were alone, **He explained all things to His disciples.**"*

**Thirdly:** If according to these demons Jesus "spoke about the Father in parable", He did not speak about Himself in parable. Talking about Himself, He clearly said that He was the Son of God. And in order to say that, He did not use any parable, neither before His disciples, nor before those who were asking Him questions about it. This means that if these demons are unwilling to believe in the Father of Jesus Christ because Jesus instead spoke about Him in parable, they should at least believe that Jesus is the Son of God, because Jesus has never used any parable to say so.

**Fourthly:** Let us admit for a few minutes that these demons are right. Let us assume that Jesus Christ spoke about the Father in parable, and that it is for that reason that He would never have said that He Himself was God the Father and the Holy Spirit.

Let's ask this simple question to those sons of the evil one. If Jesus spoke about the Father in parable, in what did the Apostles and the other Disciples speak about the Father? Did the Apostles and the other Disciples also speak about the

Father in parable? When you go through the New Testament, you notice, just as we did by doing research on this subject, that the Apostles and the other Disciples spoke about the Father of Jesus Christ more than five hundred times. According to these demons, they also were all speaking every time in parable. It is really pitiful!

**Fifthly:** It is not only Jesus that spoke about the Father. God the Father spoke about His Son, without using parables. God's Angels acknowledged that Jesus Christ is the Son of God, without using parables. Satan himself acknowledged that Jesus Christ is the Son of God, without using parables. The demons that trembled before Jesus, had all acknowledged that Jesus Christ is the Son of God, without using parables. None of the people listed above mistook Jesus for God the Father or for the Holy Spirit. Yet they used no parable.

You then understand that even if we could imitate these demons and say that Jesus spoke about the Father in parable, we would still be stuck, because it is not only Jesus who spoke about the Father.

#### 2.15.5- Fifth argument

These demons also talk about the double nature of Jesus Christ, who was fully man and fully God, and find in that a mystery that would be responsible for their blasphemy. How can Jesus Christ being fully Father and Son be a mystery? What these demons try to shroud in mystery, isn't a mystery at all. **Jesus Christ is our Heavenly Father, but He is the Son of God.** The Lord clearly revealed this in His word. He left His throne to come as man in this world to save us. Is that so hard to understand?

Let me share with you some nonsense that these people display. They tell you that, as a Son of man Jesus Christ was a Prophet, citing Deuteronomy 18:15, High Priest made like us, citing Hebrews 2:17, an Advocate, an example, **sitting at the right hand of God as the Son of God**... After having denied the right hand of God by supporting fiercely that God cannot have a right hand, they are forced against their will to acknowledge that God indeed has a right hand, and that Jesus as the Son of God is seated at the right hand of God.

What a contradiction! It is really a pity that even shame cannot bring these people of satan back to their senses. Faced with such stupid and childish contradictions, and faced with these pressing inconsistencies, these people should just repent and acknowledge defeat. But alas! They persist, and are entrenched in their opinion. We should understand them. If they repent, who will be in Hell? Given that people need to be in Hell.

#### 2.15.6- Sixth argument

Since these people also believe to be wise, this is an argument that they utter to try to contradict us: *"Saying that 'Jesus Christ is the Father implies the non-existence of the Father', is like saying that Jesus Christ as the Lamb would imply the non-existence of the Lion of the tribe of Judah because it is not the lion who was slain, but the Lamb; yet Jesus Christ is both the Lion and the lamb."* This is unfortunately all their wisdom that they have just displayed. It's a shame!

One needs to be either the most ignorant man on the planet, or another agent of satan, to be overawed by this kind of insipid reasoning. Let me explain to you what they are trying to fight by this reasoning. In fact, they are trying to fight the subject of this study. This is how we have titled it: **The non-existence of the Father of Jesus Christ: *Jesus Christ has no Father. Therefore, He Himself (Jesus Christ) is God the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit. Prove this assertion or its opposite by the Bible.***

As you have already noted, they truncated the subject. While we talked about the non-existence of the Father of Jesus Christ, they talk about the non-existence of the Father. These are indeed two separate things. Afterwards, we made the topic absolutely clear and precise. Read it again and tell me if there is the slightest ambiguity. ***Jesus Christ has no Father. Therefore, He Himself (Jesus Christ) is God the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit.*** What is difficult to understand here? What other interpretation can one put on this subject?

The subject that we are studying is the doctrine of demons that says that ***it is Jesus Christ who is at the same time God the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit.*** This simply means that there is no God the Father other than Jesus Christ, and that there is no Holy Spirit other than Jesus Christ. How is the wording of our study topic different from the wording of this satanic doctrine?

And they say afterwards that *"it is not the lion that was slain but the lamb."* So what? Where's the connection? Who's ever said that *it is the lion that was slain?*

Beloved, I have chosen through this teaching to show you the great stupidity of the agents of satan, and especially their ultimate determination never to accept the word of God. No matter how hard you put them to shame by the truth, they never repent. Even when they are completely exposed, they opt for stubbornness. For us, this remains a great mystery.

### **2.15.7- Seventh argument: There is only one God**

One of the arguments that sorcerers use to make people believe that Jesus Christ is Himself God the Father, is the assertion according to which there would be only one God. They do what they are so used to, which is to twist the verses to support their lies and their blasphemy. And to achieve their ends, they are not just contented with twisting some verses, but they also ignore the rest of the Bible. They act as if the Bible was summed up in the one verse they cling to.

These demons voluntarily choose to ignore all the other verses that will help every Christian to understand very well the meaning of God's message. The characteristic of the satanic sects is to base their doctrine on a single verse of the Bible, and act as if the Bible consisted of this one verse. Let me dismantle this argument which, like other false arguments of the agents of satan, cannot stand up to the wisdom of God.

Beloved, know that we have never disputed or contradicted the Bible. Therefore, we know very well that there is only one God, because the Bible tells us so. That is what we read in the following verses:

**Malachi 2:10** "Have we not all one Father? Has not one God created us? Why do we deal treacherously with one another by profaning the covenant of the fathers?"

**John 17:3** "And this is eternal life, that they may know You, the only true God, and Jesus Christ whom You have sent."

**Romans 3:30** "Since there is one God who will justify the circumcised by faith and the uncircumcised through faith."

**Galatians 3:20** "Now a mediator does not mediate for one only, but God is one."

**Ephesians 4:4-6** "There is one body and one Spirit, just as you were called in one hope of your calling; <sup>5</sup>one Lord, one faith, one baptism; <sup>6</sup>one God and Father of all, who is above all, and through all, and in you all."

**1Timothy 1:17** "Now to the King eternal, immortal, invisible, the only God, be honour and glory for ever and ever. Amen."

**1Timothy 2:5-6** "For there is one God and one mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus, <sup>6</sup>who gave himself as a ransom for all men ..."

**James 2:19** "You believe that there is one God. You do well. Even the demons believe - and tremble!"

### 2.15.7.1- There are many Gods

We have just confirmed by the Bible that there is only one God. But allow us to tell you something that seems to be the opposite. The Bible also teaches us that there are many gods. The demons will again mock God by telling Him that He contradicts Himself or that He is not coherent. Do not worry about it. They are within their rights. In the coming days, they will give account to God. They will find themselves before the judgment of God one day, and then we will know who between God and them is greater. Let them continue with their blasphemy.

But for you who fear God, this is what you should understand. ***There is not only one God the way these demons want it. In fact, there are many Gods, but only one true God, who has chosen to make some of His creatures Gods.*** This teaching is clearly established in the Bible. But when people choose to harden their heart, they give the impression that they understand nothing, and look for excuses to go astray and be drowned.

Let me now demonstrate to you that the assertion that **there is only one God** as well as the one that **there are many gods** are both true, that is biblical. I have already told you not to worry if the demons think that our God Jesus Christ is a God who contradicts Himself. This is what the Bible says:

**Genesis 3:5; 22** "For God doth know that in the day ye eat thereof, then your eyes shall be opened, and ye shall be as gods, knowing good and evil. ... <sup>22</sup>And the Lord God said: Behold, the man has become as one of Us, to know good and evil. And now, lest he put forth his hand and take also of the tree of life, and eat and live for ever."



**Deuteronomy 10:17** "For the Lord your God is **God of gods** and Lord of lords, the great God, mighty and awesome, who shows no partiality nor takes a bribe."

**Exodus 7:1** "So the Lord said to Moses: "See, **I have made you as God to Pharaoh**, and Aaron your brother shall be your prophet."

**Psalms 82:6-7** "I said: You are **gods**, and **all of you are children of the Most High**. <sup>7</sup> But you shall die like men, and fall like one of the princes."

**John 10:34** "Jesus answered them: Is it not written in your law, **I said, you are gods**?"

**1Corinthians 8:5-6** "For even if there are so-called gods, whether in heaven or on earth (**as there are many gods and many lords**), <sup>6</sup>yet **for us there is one God, the Father**, of whom are all things, and we for Him; and **one Lord Jesus Christ**, through whom are all things, and through whom we live."

### 2.15.7.2- Why are there many Gods?

There are many gods because God the Father wanted it that way. The only true God, is God the Father, who is the Father of us all, that is the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ and ours, all of us who believe in Jesus Christ His only Son, all of us His Children, all of us Disciples of Jesus Christ, we who have given our lives to Jesus Christ and who live for His only glory.

Jesus Christ God is therefore not God the Father. He is not even a second God for the demons to talk about duality, trinity, or plurality. He is God because His Father wanted it to be so. He is God just because His Father and ours has chosen to make Him God. He is God because God the Father has made Him God. So forget the words trinity, duality, and other phoney terms that some demons in the flesh use to discredit God and trivialize His greatness.

### 2.15.7.3- Other Gods besides Jesus

Beloved, remember that it is not only Jesus Christ that God the Father has made God. He has also made all of us gods. Therefore, in reality, as you have read in the above verses, we are all gods. Yes, we are all gods, not because we are true Gods, but because God the Father has declared it. The only difference between the God Jesus Christ and us is that we are only mortal gods, because of disobedience and because of sin. As for Jesus Christ, He is God, because God the Father has declared it, and He is the immortal God, because of His obedience and His perfect submission to the Father. We are all sons of the Most High, but we are not the Son of God.

**Moses was God.** God the Father had made him God as we have read in Exodus 7:1. Since the demons with corrupt mind try to demonstrate to us that in order for Jesus to be God, He must be the Father if not there would be two Gods, the case of Moses is there to edify us, and our own case is also there. When the Jews wanted to stone Jesus because He made Himself God, Jesus told them clearly that if we mortal men are considered by the Father as gods, how much more the Son of the living God! If God the Father declared us gods without His throne getting smaller, why would His throne be threatened when He declared His only Son God?

### 2.15.7.4- Proof that Moses was God

In addition to the passage of Exodus 7:1 in which God the Father declares that He has made Moses God, we have these other confirmations of this place of God that the Father had entrusted to Moses. Here is a proof that God the Father had formally made Moses God. It is this Moses that the Father sends to encourage the Son during His earthly ministry, as we read in the passage below.

**Luke 9:28-31** *"Now it came to pass, about eight days after these sayings, that He took Peter, John, and James and went up on the mountain to pray. <sup>29</sup>As He prayed, the appearance of His face was altered, and His robe became white and glistening. <sup>30</sup>And behold, two men talked with Him, who were **Moses** and Elijah, <sup>31</sup>who appeared in glory and spoke of His decease which He was about to accomplish at Jerusalem."*

Moses God, on a mission for God the Father, to the Son, to encourage Him. This, however, does not make Moses God the Father, or make Moses a second or a third God. Moses remains Moses, the servant of God; Jesus remains Jesus, the Son of God; and **God the Father remains God the Father, the One and Only true God and Father of all.**

**Exodus 32:7** *"And the Lord said to Moses, "Go, get down! For **your people whom you brought out of the land of Egypt** have corrupted themselves."*

If God the Father can freely say to Moses *"your people whom you brought out of the land of Egypt have corrupted themselves"*, it is a proof that the Father had really made Moses God, and had considered him as such. Is Moses God the Father? Can Moses be mistaken for God the Father?

The demons in the flesh who accuse us of teaching what they call "trinity", just because we say that Jesus Christ is God different from God the Father, will certainly accuse us now of teaching the "quarterty". They never lack words. Since we have just established by the Bible that Moses was declared God by God the Father, and considered as such, they will stick another name on our back.

**Deuteronomy 18:15** *"The Lord your God will raise up for you **a Prophet like me** from your midst, from your brethren. Him you shall hear!"*

**Acts 3:22** *"For Moses truly said to the fathers, 'The Lord your God will raise up for you **a Prophet like me** from your brethren. Him you shall hear in all things, whatever He says to you.'*

If Moses, announcing Jesus to the people can say **"a Prophet like me"**, it is another proof that the Father had made Moses God, and He does not regret it, whether the sorcerers, who find that the Bible contradicts itself because it speaks of one God and acknowledges at the same time that Jesus Christ, although being God, is not God the Father, like it or not.

Beloved, I have just demonstrated to you that the agents of satan who claim to know the Bible, understand nothing at all. Their desire to change and to falsify the word of God leads them no longer to understand even the basics of the Bible. That's why the Bible teaches us that these people are clouds without water, late autumn trees without fruit, twice dead, pulled up by the roots.

**Jude 10-13** *"<sup>10</sup>But these speak evil of whatever they do not know; and whatever they know naturally, like brute beasts, in these things they corrupt themselves. <sup>11</sup>Woe to them! For they have gone in the way of Cain, have run greedily in the error of Balaam for profit, and perished in the rebellion of Korah. <sup>12</sup>These are spots in your love feasts, while they feast with you without fear, serving only themselves. **They are clouds without water, carried about by the winds; late autumn trees without fruit, twice dead, pulled up by the roots; <sup>13</sup>... wandering stars for whom is reserved the blackness of darkness forever.**"*

#### 2.15.7.5- What about the Lord and the lords?

There are many Lords, but only one true Lord, Jesus Christ that His Father has chosen to make Lord. Apart from Jesus Christ the immortal Lord, there are many other lords, but all mortals. Abraham was lord, as his servants and even his wife Sarah called him. But he was not Lord on the same footing as the Lord Jesus Christ. In the same way that there are many Gods but only one true God, there are many Lords, but only one true Lord.

#### 2.15.7.6- The Trinity

What we have developed above allows us to understand more easily that the concept of trinity is a meaningless notion. ***There have never been many true Gods, and there will never be.*** "... **there is one God, the Father**, of whom are all things, and we for Him; **and one Lord Jesus Christ**, through whom are all things, and through whom we live." **1Corinthians 8:6.**

#### 2.15.8- Eighth argument: "Functions" and "attributes" of God

This is another common word in the jargon of these agents of satan who support this satanic doctrine according to which Jesus Christ is at the same time God the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit. While some speak of functions, others speak of attributes. And they come out with words such as "unitary god", "triune god", meaningless terms, which have no biblical basis.

Those who speak about functions say that God is one and changes depending on what he wants to do. And they explain that "God the Father" is a function, "God the Son" is another function and "God the Holy Spirit" is yet another function, and all this represents one and the same person who metamorphoses according to the circumstances.

Those who speak about attributes say that *"the only Everlasting God manifests his various attributes depending on the task he is performing. God is the Father, the Son and the Holy Spirit because God became our Father through the man Jesus Christ our Lord who dwells in us by his Holy Spirit, which is simply Jesus Christ Spirit."* This is the abomination that these sons of the evil one support, thereby making God a liar, and declaring the Bible false.

Do no longer allow these demons to distract you with what they call "attributes". Ask them just one verse. If you do not want these demons to waste your time with their reasoning that will irritate and revolt you by their very baseness, just ask them for a verse in which it is written that Jesus Christ is God the Father and the Holy Spirit. Just ask them for that one verse and put a speedy end to it.

And to come back to the notion of "**attributes**", let me remind you that it is this empty word that these demons use every time they are stuck and do not want to admit what the Bible teaches us, namely that Jesus Christ is neither God the Father nor the Holy Spirit. It is also with this word that they dispute the teaching on water baptism, teaching people that water baptism must be done exclusively in the name of "jesus", and not in the name of the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit.

### 2.15.9- Ninth argument

Among other things, they say that Jesus Christ is "Heir of the world", and "A Source of blessing to all families of the Earth", "Our Redeemer parent", etc. We do not even know what this is all about. While we ask them to give us a single verse, just one, which says that Jesus Christ is God the Father and the Holy Spirit, they cannot, but they cite nonsense, "Heir of the world", "Source of blessing to all families of the Earth", "Our Redeemer parent". .... Don't you find this pitiful?

### 2.16- "It poses a problem"

This title is actually a language often used by a chief demon who has sworn to tempt God as no demon had done before him. Let me share with you some other statements of this serpent that expose him. Whenever he is overthrown by the truth, he says that if Jesus Christ is truly the Son of God different from His father, *"it poses a problem"*. Whenever he makes that statement, he is actually acknowledging that his satanic doctrine is false. This sorcerer is indirectly admitting that his satanic doctrine poses a problem. But several blind that follow him are so bound by his occult power that they do not realize it.

Listen to these other statements of this same sorcerer that conveys this satanic doctrine: *"If Jesus were not God the Father how would God allow someone else to take all His glory, all His place? **Hence it poses a problem.**"* Listen to the reasoning of this serpent. Here he is mistaken God the Father for their master lucifer. What characterizes lucifer is pride. He so strongly values his glory and his place that he never tolerates, no matter the reason, that his privileges are threatened. This sorcerer then thinks that God the Father is the same.

This statement of this son of the evil one betrays him. This allows you to understand that he is not sure of his doctrine. His doctrine is based on his poor knowledge of God the Father, and on this comparison that he makes between lucifer and God. He assumes that God the Father is supposed to function like satan. And if Jesus is truly different from God the Father and God the Father shares His glory and His place with Him as the Bible teaches us, then *"it poses a problem."*

### 2.17- "The most cited name of God in the Old Testament"

Another element with which these demons lead astray the ignorant who listen to them is what they call *"the most cited name of God in the Old Testament"*. Here is an excerpt from one of the speeches of one of those chief demons: *"Give me the name of God that is most cited in the Old Testament... Yahweh, who is okay with me, from Genesis to Malachi, true or false? From Matthew, where is*

*the name of Yahweh? Gone, do you know why? Because it's Jesus. You say that Jesus is not the Father, then give me the name of the Father revealed in the Gospels and the Epistles. God says that His people will know His name, if Jesus is not the Father **it poses a problem**. How does the Father in this case hide His name to people? Jesus prayed and said I have revealed to them Your name, what's the name?"*

When you read this gibberish, you realize that it is a drunk who is talking; the speech is so confused, meaningless, and full of inconsistencies. I would not even waste time commenting on it. I will leave you to examine it yourselves in order to detect all the inconsistencies therein. Whenever this demon is stuck, he finds that his reasoning "*poses a problem*", but he never repents.

### **2.18- These demons believe they are more intelligent than us, true Children of God**

These are a few other reasoning of the same chief demon that conveys this satanic doctrine. **John 1:18** says: "*No one has seen God at any time. The only begotten Son, who is in the bosom of the Father, He has declared Him.*" And in **John 14:8-10** we read: "*Philip said to Him, 'Lord, show us the Father, and it is sufficient for us.'*" <sup>9</sup>*Jesus said to him, 'Have I been with you so long, and yet you have not known Me, Philip? He who has seen Me has seen the Father; so how can you say, 'Show us the Father'? "*<sup>10</sup>*"Do you not believe that **I am in the Father**, and **the Father in Me**? ..."*

This demon tries to link these two passages of John with 1John 2:22 who says: "*Who is a **liar** but he who denies that Jesus is the Christ? **He is antichrist** who denies the **Father** and the Son.*" And he makes this combination to prove that the Bible is false. Here is his analysis: "*Because an antichrist is someone who denies the Son and the Father, but the Son and the Father cannot be separated, because the Son reveals the Father and the Father reveals the Son.*" By this, this demon wants to say that the verse of 1John 2:22 is wrong because it would contradict John 14:8.

***Whenever these demons are unable to give you the only verse that you ask them***, they begin to play professors of arts. They start explaining words. They will tell you that such word in Greek has such meaning, or that the real meaning of this other word would be this, and so on. They know the real definitions and the true origins of every word. You should no longer fall into the trap of listening to these idle talkers. Peter and John knew neither Greek nor Latin; they did not know the "true origins" and the "true definitions" of words. They were uneducated and untrained men. Yet they had understood and taught the word of God very well. There is therefore no need to know Greek and the origins of words to understand the word of God. Rather, one needs to have the Holy Spirit. One simply needs to be of God to understand His word.

### **2.19- Some other verses that overthrow the reasoning of serpents**

Since the demons are outraged by the words of Jesus in John 14:8 and try to say that if Jesus is in the Father, and the Father is in Him, it means that the Father is again Jesus, here are a few verses that overthrow the reasoning of these serpents:

**Matthew 10:40** "He who **receives you receives Me**, and he who **receives Me receives Him** who sent Me." **Luke 10:16** "He who **hears you hears Me**, he who **rejects you rejects Me**, and he who rejects Me rejects Him who sent Me." **John 6:56** "He who eats My flesh and drinks My blood **abides in Me**, and **I in him**." **John 13:20** "Most assuredly, I say to you, he who **receives whomever** I send **receives Me**; and he who receives Me receives Him who sent Me."

**John 14:20** "At that day you will know that **I am in My Father**, and **you in Me**, and **I in you**." **John 15:4** "**Abide in Me**, and **I in you**. As the branch cannot bear fruit of itself, unless it abides in the vine, neither can you, unless **you abide in Me**." **John 15:5** "I am the vine, you are the branches. He who **abides in Me**, and **I in him**, bears much fruit; for without Me you can do nothing." **John 15:6** "If anyone **does not abide in Me**, he is cast out as a branch and is withered; and they gather them and throw them into the fire, and they are burned."

**John 15:7** "If you **abide in Me**, and My words abide in you, you will ask what you desire, and it shall be done for you." **John 17:21** "That they all may be one, as You, Father, **are in Me**, and **I in You**; that they also may **be one in Us**, that the world may believe that You sent Me." **John 17:23** "**I in them**, and **You in Me**; that they may be made perfect in one, and that the world may know that You have sent Me, and have loved them as You have loved Me." **Galatians 2:20** "I have been crucified with Christ; it is no longer I who live, **but Christ lives in me**; and the life which I now live in the flesh I live by faith in the Son of God, who loved me and gave Himself for me."

## 2.20- Demons will never teach you the truth

Know from now on that demons will never teach you the truth, **because there is no truth in them**. Their father the devil is a liar, and their job is to lie like him. Therefore, truth can never be found in them. Do not go by the expression "Sound doctrine" that these demons often use. It is to cause confusion in the work we do that they use these expressions. It is to make people believe that they also teach Sound doctrine like us. But God has chosen to confound them, by exposing their lie. Their blasphemy is clearly uncovered, and now **only other demons like them will believe in them**.

If you do not want to become the prey of these demons, do not waste time listening to them. Otherwise you will eventually be deceived if you are feeble-minded, or if you do not have enough discernment. Do no longer waste time listening to demons blaspheming by twisting biblical verses. **Just ask them to give you one verse that says that Jesus Christ is God the Father and the Holy Spirit**. We have just proven to you in this teaching that God has clearly answered that question for us.

To prove to you that Jesus Christ is the Son of God, we did not use any dilatory or deceitful technique; we did not join verses together to try to interpret them; we did not interpret any verse; we made no deduction; and we used no imagery to deceive you; we only gave you verses that say word for word and clearly that Jesus Christ is the Son of God, that Jesus Christ is different from God the Father,

and that Jesus Christ is not the Holy Spirit. We did not embark on demonstrations that will confuse you and send you to sleep.

### 2.21- These demons want to pervert the Gospel of Christ

Listen to what the Apostles told us: **Galatians 1:1-9** *"Paul, an apostle (not from men nor through man, but through **Jesus Christ** and **God the Father** who raised Him from the dead), <sup>2</sup>and all the brethren who are with me, to the churches of Galatia: <sup>3</sup>Grace to you and peace from **God the Father and our Lord Jesus Christ**, <sup>4</sup>who gave Himself for our sins, that He might deliver us from this present evil age, according to the will of **our God and Father**, <sup>5</sup>to whom be glory forever and ever. Amen. <sup>6</sup>I marvel that you are turning away so soon from Him who called you in the grace of Christ, to a different gospel, <sup>7</sup>which is not another; **but there are some who trouble you and want to pervert the gospel of Christ.** <sup>8</sup>**But even if we, or an angel from heaven, preach any other gospel to you than what we have preached to you, let him be accursed.** <sup>9</sup>As we have said before, so now I say again, **if anyone preaches any other gospel to you than what you have received, let him be accursed.**"*

These are so-called Christians to whom demons preach another gospel, a gospel that is not written anywhere, and they believe, whereas the Bible asks them to do exactly the opposite. The Bible asks them as you have just read, to vigorously condemn the blasphemy of these accursed, and to chase those demons away, far from them, or to move away as much as possible from these agents of Hell. These serpents and their doctrine should be rejected vigorously.

### 2.22- These demons know more than Jesus

**John 7:28-29** says: *"Then Jesus cried out, as He taught in the temple, saying, 'You both know Me, and you know where I am from; and **I have not come of Myself**, but **He who sent Me** is true, whom you do not know. <sup>29</sup>But I know Him, for **I am from Him**, and He sent Me.'" And **John 7:16** says: "Jesus answered: My teaching **is not My own**. It comes from Him who sent Me."*

Jesus said that He has not come of Himself and that He is from the Father, the demons say that the Father does not exist and that Jesus came of Himself, because He Himself is His own Father. Although He publicly declares that even His teaching is not His own, but comes from His Father who sent Him, the demons still try to prove Him wrong. You then understand that these demons know more than Jesus.

The Bible tells us in **1Corinthians 11:3** *"But I want you to know that the head of every man is Christ, the head of woman is man, and the head of Christ is God."* The Lord clearly says **"But I want you to know"**. A way of saying that no possible discussion around this subject must be tolerated. Therefore, it is an established truth, that **the head of Christ is God**. This fact must not be disputed. Yet it is what the demons contest, by saying that God the Father is not the head of Christ, because Christ is Himself God the Father.

## 2.23- God is the Head of Christ

Let us try to understand this passage of **1Corinthians 11:3**, in the light of the doctrine of these demons. The Bible tells us that **God is the head of Christ**. It is obvious that the Bible talks here about God the Father. This word is so clear that it is not possible to dispute it. What then do those demons do? Since they cannot dispute this truth, they say that although the Bible says that God is the head of Christ, it is just a way of speaking, and that we must not take this literally.

Even if we must not take everything literally in the word of God, what we must take literally does not pose any problem. God who has created us in His own image, has given us the ability to distinguish what must be taken literally in His word, and what must not be taken literally. Do not allow yourselves to be deceived by this false speech from the agents of satan.

But let's admit for a few minutes that they are right. Let's suppose that we must not take this passage of 1Corinthians 11:3 literally, and let's agree with these demons that it is just a way of speaking. This is where this will lead us: **the head of Christ is God**, it's just a way of speaking, it is Christ Himself who is God the Father. Logical conclusion, **Christ is the head of every man**, it's just a way of speaking, man himself is Christ; **man is the head of woman**, it's just a way of speaking, woman herself is man. Hallelujah! The reasoning of the demons is so convincing that we do no longer need to be more convinced that we are really dealing with demons.

We can go even further in this reasoning, and rewrite this verse. This is what it would be: "But I want you to know that **the head of every man is Christ**, the head of woman is man, and **the head of Christ is Christ**." For you to conclude.

## 2.24- The Son subjected to the Father

**1Corinthians 15:27-28** *"For He has put all things under His feet." But when He says "all things are put under Him," it is evident that He who put all things under Him is excepted. <sup>28</sup>Now when all things are made subject to Him, then the Son Himself will also be subject to Him who put all things under Him, that God may be all in all."*

Help me understand how after reading this verse of 1Corinthians 15:27-28, someone can try to prove that Jesus Christ is God the Father. Unless one is inhabited by the devil, with a mission to challenge God and to find God a liar, how can one understand or interpret this passage otherwise?

## 2.25- The Scripture cannot be broken

If the Scripture could be broken, satan and his agents would have broken it since. They have tried everything unsuccessfully. They never get tired. Satan still has on earth very zealous agents who are convinced that they will succeed where their predecessors had failed. They are wasting their time. Here's what the Bible says: **1Peter 1:25** *"But the word of the Lord stands forever." And this is the word that was preached to you.* **John 10:35-36** *"If he called them 'gods,' to whom the word of God came - and the Scripture cannot be broken*



- <sup>36</sup>*what about the one whom the Father set apart as his very own and sent into the world? Why then do you accuse me of blasphemy because I said, 'I am God's Son'?"*

## 2.26- The spirit of confusion

Another element that characterizes these servants of lucifer who develop and convey this blasphemy is the spirit of confusion. What is it? It is the art of confusing those who listen to them, so that in the end, nobody gets what they had said. These demons always say several things and their opposites in the same speech, in a strange blend, making you believe that they had said many things, except that if someone asks you clearly what you have learned, you will be stuck.

They intentionally speak ambiguously, and engage in a confused mixture of elements in order to confuse people's minds. It is a technique of demons deceivers, the art of talking too much for the sake of talking. And with their incantations, those who listen to them have the impression that they have said a lot of good things. This is the **manipulation spirit of demons**.

## 2.27- "A spirit has to come and convince me"

When the teachings are so much clearer that it becomes impossible for the agents of satan to find any argument to justify themselves, some say that a spirit would have to come and convince them before they could believe, or that a spirit would have to reveal to them the contrary of what they were believing.

Beloved, do no longer be distracted by this kind of incantations. You already know that the demons will never believe. When they tell you that a spirit would have to come and convince them, they are actually revealing to you that they cannot take a risk of recognizing the truth unless one of the demons in spirit that control them grants them permission. Do not forget that these people are all under the control of the unclean spirits.

Do no longer fall into the trap of believing that when they talk about a spirit that would come and convince them, they speak about the Holy Spirit. They speak about a demon of the world of darkness. Now that the teaching is clear to all of you, as soon as you hear that kind of language, shake off the dust from your feet and leave.

Beloved, there is so much evidence against this doctrine of demons that if I were to write them one by one, this teaching would be as bulky as the Bible. All you need to do if you treasure your salvation is to stop exposing yourself to the venom of these serpents, and to ensure that you no longer waste a minute listening to them. You must see to it that you do not receive into your house demons who come to preach this gospel of the devil. Ensure that this kind of blasphemy is no longer taught in your house, and keep away from all the serpents that convey this kind of venom.

If you come across a few ignorant people who have fallen into the trap of this false doctrine and who believe in it, just give them this teaching. By the grace of God, everything is therein. Do not embark on any vain discussion. Any person

who believed in this lie out of ignorance will repent after reading all the evidence that we have given them in this teaching.

## 2.28- Everything that does not come from faith is sin

Whenever you explain the word of God to some deceivers who parade themselves as Christians but who are not ready to obey God, they pretend not to understand. But when the points you are explaining to them are so easy to understand that they would lay themselves open to ridicule if they say that they have not understood, they instead tell you that they are not convinced, and that they will wait for God to convince them. And to support their deception, they quote you the second part of the verse of Romans 14:23 that says: *"Everything that does not come from faith is sin."*

This is what Romans 14:23 says: *"But the man who has doubts is condemned if he eats, because his eating is not from faith; and everything that does not come from faith is sin."* Read again for yourself this verse and see how the agents of satan use it. These people distort every time the word of God to justify their rebellion. Since they like to parade themselves as Christians, they must also cite biblical verses to justify their refusal to put the word of God into practice. For these rebels, putting the word of God into practice constitutes a sin, as long as they can allege that they are not convinced.

The Lord has already given us the secret. Whenever you hear deceivers hold this kind of language, shake the dust off your feet and leave. Do not at all think that it is by dint of speaking that you will eventually win them over. Know that satan and his agents have made a choice; that of opposing God, that of refusing to recognize the authority of God. Since these serpents' mission is to turn God's Children away from the path of eternal life, they are very good at twisting the word of God. They are masters in manipulation. They always make the effort to use the word of God wrongly, to deceive the weak and ignorant people.

## 2.29- The demons will never believe

Do not be surprised if despite all the demonstrations that we make, there are people who do not believe. No matter how hard we explain the word of God, no matter how hard we display the knowledge and the wisdom of God, there are people who are not in the least impressed. This should not surprise you. If Jesus during His ministry on earth could not convince the sons of satan, do not believe that we will be the ones to do it. We will never be more convincing than the Lord. Whatever we do, demons will never believe. And the fact of knowing this helps us not to waste time unnecessarily in debates and other discussions that are fruitless.

To better understand this, just meditate on this passage of **Luke 16:19-31**. When the rich man begged father Abraham to send Lazarus to his father's house, being convinced according to him that if someone from the dead went to them, they would repent, what was father Abraham's response? ***"They will not be convinced even if someone rises from the dead."*** It means everything, beloved. Therefore, let us stop suffering thinking that we will win for the Lord people who have sworn not to be saved.

## 2.30- Blasphemies

This is one of the blasphemies that one of the chief demons who pollutes the Christian milieu with this satanic doctrine spends his time trotting out. Although these remarks are pretty vulgar, I will, against my wish, share with you an excerpt of the despicable words of this demon.

*This is what he said: "I ask you a question. Who knocked Mary up? ... The Holy Spirit? And the Holy Spirit how is he also called? ... The spirit of Jesus Christ. ... But Paul says here that Christ is God. He speaks about the Spirit of God and immediately after he says the Spirit of Christ. ... So it is indeed said that He himself is the father, because it is his spirit that knocked Mary up. There you are, that's the incarnation! The mystery of godliness. ... god that will himself, won't he, incarnate..."*

This son of perdition embarks on a kind of monologue dialogue involving the simpletons who follow him, and uses the passages of Acts 16:7, Romans 8:9, Romans 9:5 and 1John 5:20, to show that Jesus is His own Father. He mixes these verses incongruously to come to the conclusion that Jesus would have "knocked Marie up", forgive me the repetition of this dirt, so that she gives birth to Jesus. Jesus would be His own Father. And this is, according to this demon, "the mystery of godliness".

And while he trots out such nonsense, you have some simpletons seated who seem to revel in the venom of this serpent, to the point of applauding. It's enough to make you cry, beloved. In view of this macabre spectacle and this nauseous comedy, you wonder what is happening in the minds of all those who sit down listening to him, having fun, laughing and even rejoicing.

Know that these people are simply under the power of a great hypnosis. With all the pacts that this demon has signed with lucifer, he has been endowed with some satanic power, and can put people to sleep, including many of those who have been to school and are well educated. Since this serpent is convinced that his great power can put everyone to sleep, he often takes the liberty of standing before a very large audience and practice the occultism and magical arts during his demonstration sessions of the so-called power he claims to have. It is freely that he performs his incantations and his invocations in full view of everybody. And he prides himself on performing deliverance.

Why does he act so freely without being at all embarrassed, it's because he is sure that all those who see him are so hypnotized that nobody will wonder what he is doing. What this serpent does not know is that, though his great power of hypnosis may have effects on those who have already allowed themselves to be swallowed up by him, this power cannot have any effect on the true Children of God that we are.

This is another incantation of this same chief demon. This is what he said: *"It is not because you're French, American, African, that you're going to understand the word of God. You can have fifty years, ninety years... that's not the problem. You can be black, yellow, brown, chocolate, blue ... **it is not because you read the word that you're going to understand it.** You need the Philip. That is people who have received a mandate."*

This demon is there encouraging people not to read the Bible, because they will not understand it. All those who follow him should let him, him who is Philip, read the Bible on their behalf, since he would have received a mandate. It is this same kind of incantations that Catholic priests made before on their faithful, giving them the impression that the Bible is a mystery that only they could demystify.

This is the reason why thousands of people though well educated remained stuck in Catholicism for years, despite the aberration of the Catholic doctrine, and despite the fact that the deceptions of the Catholic sect were so obvious that one did not need to be intelligent to detect them. One only has to read the Bible themselves.

This is therefore another demon, brave and very sure of himself, who comes back in the middle of the 21st century, with a satan trick that is really obsolete, being sure that his incantations will always succeed, and unfortunately they succeed. The evidence is that several dozen people follow him, without realizing that they are on the way to Hell.

### **2.31- The non-existence of the Son of God before his coming to earth**

This is the element that seems to be central point of the doctrine of these demons who argue that Jesus Christ has no Father. These sons of the devil try to demonstrate that Jesus Christ never existed as a Son before His coming to earth. According to their satanic doctrine, Jesus as the Son only existed from His birth by Mary. These serpents go so far as to say that the Old Testament makes no mention of any notion of sons of God. While they deny the existence of the Son of God before His human birth, they also deny the existence of the Father before the birth of the Son.

Beloved, we do not really know what these serpents want. It makes us wonder whether we read the same Bible. They support one thing and its opposite the next second. These people are really possessed by a confusing spirit. This spirit makes them idiots without them even realizing it. When they begin to develop their folly, you feel ashamed in their place; for what they say is so absurd. And since they have sworn never to recognize the authority of God, they are always challenging Him, and they constantly have questions for Him.

As they know well how to challenge God, this is one of the questions they ask Him: *"... The Lord God is revealed as Father, through the birth of his Son from the New Testament. ... Thus, we understand by these verses that the Lord God was manifested as a Father of a man only from the New Testament. How to explain this peculiarity? How to explain the fact that the Lord God was not manifested as a Father before?"*

Until God answers them, since He is certainly obliged to answer them, let me demonstrate to you the absurdity of this reasoning. They declare that the Lord God is revealed as Father only from the New Testament. We do not even know what they are talking about, because we know that the Lord has always been Father, and He has always been our Father. These sons of the devil are the only ones who know what they are looking for. And if the Lord God is only revealed

as Father through the birth of Jesus from the New Testament, as these demons would have us believe, the questions that we have the right to ask are as followed:

Who was the Lord before the New Testament, since He was not Father? Since one has to wait until the New Testament for God to become Father, who was the Father of all those who were on earth before the birth of Jesus? Never fall into the trap of the teaching of these demons, which gives the impression that God is the Father of Jesus alone. God is also our Father. And if you believe that God is your Father, it means that according to the doctrine of these vipers, He has only become your Father from the New Testament. Before the New Testament, God must have certainly been your cousin or your uncle or your nephew. He was not your Father, since He had to wait for the New Testament to become Father. The teaching of these demons is incredible. But they believe they have a secret that we do not have, and they are convinced that they hold a mystery that escapes us. Hallelujah!

These serpents go so far as to say that the Old Testament has never made mention of any son of God, and that the word son is found nowhere in the Old Testament. And as usual, it is the opposite of what these sons of the devil say, that is true. Let's see what the Bible says:

**Psalm 89:6** *"For who in the heavens can be compared to the Lord? Who among the **sons of the mighty** can be likened to the Lord?"* This verse alone shows us that the Old Testament speaks of the sons of the mighty.

**Psalm 2:6-7** *"Yet I have set My King on My holy hill of Zion. <sup>7</sup>I will declare the decree: **The Lord has said to Me**, 'You are My Son, today I have begotten You'."*

Let's read this other verse that silences the agents of Hell. *"Who has ascended into heaven, or descended? Who has gathered the wind in His fists? Who has bound the waters in a garment? Who has established all the ends of the earth? **What is His name, and what is His Son's name**, if you know?"* **Proverbs 30:4.**

We are indeed here in the Old Testament, and we see the Father who speaks of Himself and of His Son, hundreds of years before the coming of Jesus to earth. This is how the Lord always makes sure He silences these serpents. However, do not expect these sons of perdition to repent. No! They will never repent. They will instead work hard to find a few other topics of blasphemies to develop.

And when some sorcerers find themselves stuck by all these verses of which they were unaware, they have the nerve to say that these verses are prophetic, a way of saying that though these verses speak clearly of the sons of God, **it's just prophetic**. They forget that they were adamant that there was no verse in the Old Testament, which speaks of the sons of God. This bitter observation reveals the sad reality about the demons. Whatever you do, they will never repent. Sometimes you wonder how they manage to be so stubborn.

Now beloved, to come back to the word prophetic referred to by these serpents, know that ***the whole Bible is prophetic***. If we are to talk in terms of prophetic,

it is in fact **every verse of the Bible which is prophetic**. The proof is that this Bible, though written several thousands of years ago, is being fulfilled every day in each of our lives. Therefore, do not be distracted when these serpents begin to talk of "**prophetic**" because they do not want to repent.

### **2.31.1- Jesus was at the creation of all things and had even participated in it**

**Genesis 1:26** *"Then God said: **Let Us make** man in **Our** image, according to **Our** likeness; let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, over the birds of the air, and over the cattle, over all the earth and over every creeping thing that creeps on the earth."*

When we examine this verse in the light of those mentioned below, we clearly understand that the Son was with His Father at the creation of all things.

**John 1:1-14** *"In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. ... <sup>3</sup>**Through him all things were made**; without him nothing was made that has been made. ... <sup>14</sup>**The Word became flesh** and made his dwelling among us. We have seen his glory, the glory of the One and Only, who came from the Father, full of grace and truth."*

**Romans 11:36** *"For of Him and through Him and to Him are all things, to whom be glory forever. Amen."*

**Hebrews 1:2** *"But in these last days He has spoken to us by His Son, whom He appointed heir of all things, and **through whom He made the universe**."*

**Colossians 1:15-16** *"He is the image of the invisible God, the firstborn over all creation. <sup>16</sup>**For by Him all things were created: things in heaven and on earth, visible and invisible, whether thrones or powers or rulers or authorities; all things were created by Him and for Him.**"*

When God says, **let us make** man in **our** image, according to **our** likeness, we understand from the passages of John 1, of Colossians 1 and Hebrews 1 cited above that Christ is either the one who was with God, or one of those who were at that very moment with God. Colossians 1 confirms that Christ was made in the image of God, and Genesis 1:26, already cited, and Romans 8:29 cited below teach us that we are made in the image of Christ and of God.

### **2.31.2- Jesus had been created long before His coming to earth**

**Micah 5:2** *"But you, Bethlehem Ephrathah, though you are small among the clans of Judah, out of you will come for me one who will be ruler over Israel, **whose origins are from of old, from ancient times.**"*

**Romans 8:29** *"For those God foreknew he also predestined to be conformed to the likeness of his Son, that He might be the firstborn among many brothers."*

**Philippians 2:5-7** *"Your attitude should be the same as that of Christ Jesus: <sup>6</sup>**Who, being in very nature God, did not consider equality with God something to be grasped, <sup>7</sup>but made himself nothing, taking the very nature of a servant, being made in human likeness.**"*

**Colossians 1:15-18** "He is the image of the invisible God, **the firstborn over all creation.** <sup>16</sup>For by Him all things were created: things in heaven and on earth, visible and invisible, whether thrones or powers or rulers or authorities; **all things were created by Him and for Him.** <sup>17</sup>**He is before all things,** and in him all things hold together. <sup>18</sup>And he is the head of the body, the church; **he is the beginning and the firstborn from among the dead, so that in everything he might have the supremacy."**

**Revelation 1:4** "John, to the seven churches in the province of Asia: Grace and peace to you from him who is, and **who was**, and who is to come, and from the seven spirits before his throne."

**Revelation 1:8** "I am **the Alpha and the Omega**, says the Lord God, **who is, and who was, and who is to come**, the Almighty."

**Revelation 3:14** "And to the angel of the church of the Laodiceans write, these things says the Amen, the Faithful and True Witness, **the Beginning of the creation of God."**

Jesus Christ cannot be the beginning of the creation of God, and not exist before His birth. Unless these demons prove to us that creation means birth.

### **2.31.3- Before coming to earth to die for us, Jesus was in Heaven with God the Father**

**Proverbs 8:22-32** "**The Lord brought me forth as the first of his works,** before his deeds of old; <sup>23</sup>I was appointed from eternity, from the beginning, before the world began. <sup>24</sup>When there were no oceans, I was given birth, when there were no springs abounding with water; <sup>25</sup>before the mountains were settled in place, **before the hills, I was given birth.** <sup>26</sup>While as yet He had not made the earth or the fields, or the primeval dust of the world. <sup>27</sup>**When He prepared the heavens, I was there,** when He drew a circle on the face of the deep, <sup>28</sup>When He established the clouds above, when He strengthened the fountains of the deep, <sup>29</sup>when He assigned to the sea its limit, so that the waters would not transgress His command, when He marked out the foundations of the earth, <sup>30</sup>then **I was beside Him as a master craftsman;** and I was daily His delight, rejoicing always before Him, <sup>31</sup>rejoicing in His inhabited world, and my delight was with the sons of men. <sup>32</sup>"Now therefore, listen to me, my children, for blessed are those who keep my ways."

**John 3:13** "No one has ascended to heaven but **He who came down from Heaven**, that is, the Son of Man who is in heaven."

**John 6:62** "What if you see the Son of Man ascend **to where he was before!**"

**John 17:5** "And now, Father, glorify me in your presence with the glory I had **with you before the world began.**"

**John 17:24** "Father, I want those you have given me to be with me where I am, and to see my glory, the glory you have given me **because you loved me before the creation of the world.**"

**1John 1:2** *"The life was manifested, and we have seen, and bear witness, **and declare to you that eternal life which was with the Father** and was manifested to us."*

#### **2.31.4- Jesus walked with the people of Israel in the wilderness**

**1Corinthians 10:4** *"And drank the same spiritual drink; for they drank from the spiritual rock **that accompanied them**, and that rock was Christ."*

#### **2.31.5- Jesus was before John the Baptist**

**John 1:15** *"John testifies concerning him. He cries out, saying: This was he of whom I said, '**He who comes after me has surpassed me because he was before me**.'"* **John 1:30** *"This is the one I meant when I said, 'A man who comes after me has surpassed me **because he was before me**.'"*

#### **2.31.6- Notion of son well established in the Old Testament**

All those who have been deceived by this lie of the sons of perdition, must now understand that the Bible speaks clearly of sons of God in the Old Testament. Their assertion that the notion of son has never existed in the Old Testament, and that the word son of God only appears in the New Testament with the birth of Jesus on earth, is yet another obscenity that these serpents utter every time. You should already know that the demons will never say anything true. They have no truth in them. They are just liars like their father the devil.

I would like to give you two other important elements that will completely set you free from the lie of the agents of Hell. Firstly, you should understand that the Old Testament clearly speaks of son of God. This notion has therefore not started from Mary, as the demons claim. Secondly, Jesus is not the only one that God the Father has called son of God. The Bible clearly talks about many sons of God. Let me prove it to you:

**Genesis 6:1-2** *"When human beings began to increase in number on the earth and daughters were born to them, <sup>2</sup>**the sons of God** saw that the daughters of humans were beautiful, and they married any of them they chose."*

**Job 1:6-7** *"Now there was a day when **the sons of God** came to present themselves before the Lord, and satan also came among them. <sup>7</sup>And the Lord said to satan, "From where do you come?" So satan answered the Lord and said, "From going to and fro on the earth, and from walking back and forth on it'."*

**Psalms 2:6-7** *"Yet I have set My King on My holy hill of Zion. <sup>7</sup>I will declare the decree: The Lord has said to Me, **You are My Son**, today I have begotten You."*

**Psalms 89:6** *"For who in the heavens can be compared to the Lord? Who among **the sons of the mighty** can be likened to the Lord?" This verse alone shows us that the Old Testament mentions the notion of son of God.*

**Proverbs 30:4** *"Who has ascended into heaven, or descended? Who has gathered the wind in His fists? Who has bound the waters in a garment? Who has established all the ends of the earth? What is His name, and **what is His Son's name**, if you know?"*



### 2.32- A doctrine full of contradictions

There are too many contradictions in the words of these demons that one wonders whether they have taken leave of their senses. They get muddled up, and confuse those who have no discernment, and who have the misfortune of listening to them. Whenever these serpents are stuck by the multitude of verses that speak clearly of the Son of God different from God the Father, since they can no longer deny this truth, they tell you that the Son was instead in the mind of the Father.

Let me demonstrate to you the absurdity of this reasoning. When these demons declare that the Son was rather in the mind of the Father, they are simply acknowledging that the Son is not the Father. They admit without realizing it that the Son is different from the Father. Because it is only a Son different from the Father who can be in the mind of the Father. The Father cannot be in His own mind. Even if according to the demons the Son was rather in the mind of the Father, it remains all the same that this Son is different from the Father. This helps you to understand that the teaching of these demons will never stand, regardless of how it is explained, and of what other nonsense they will try to trot out.

### 2.33- Spirit, soul and body

This is another baseness that these demons display whenever they are short of argument. They tell you that the father and the son are inseparable and indissociable, while taking the example of man who is a triune being composed of spirit, soul, and body. They say that in the same way that one cannot dissociate the mind of man from his body and from his soul, one cannot either dissociate the father from the son and from the holy spirit. These foolish tell you that the father is the mind, the son is the word, and the holy spirit is the action. I have already told you that when they speak of the father or the son, do not forget that they are not speaking of our heavenly Father and our Lord and Master Jesus Christ. These serpents speak of their father the devil, of their Jesus who is nothing more than a demon, and their holy spirit who is one of the unclean spirits of their world of darkness.

### 2.34- And if the demons were right

***What would Jesus gain by spending His time on earth lying? What pressure was Jesus under so as to be forced to lie? Why spending all His time talking about a Father He would never have had?*** If the Father does not really exist, Jesus Christ would either be a liar, or an impostor or an unbalanced person. And do you really imagine a Jesus Christ liar, or impostor or mentally unbalanced?

If demons were right, the Bible would be false; because it teaches from Genesis to Revelation that Jesus Christ has a Father. If demons were right, God the Father Himself would not exist, because Jesus would be God the Father.

If demons were right, Jesus Christ would be a liar because He spoke of a Father He never had; moreover, He would be an impostor, because He passed Himself

off as the Son of God, whereas He would in fact be God the Father; finally, He would be mentally ill, since He had trotted out things that neither had meaning nor foundation. Spending His time talking about a Father who would not exist, and a Holy Spirit who would not exist, because He Himself would be God the Father and the Holy Spirit, is a proof that Jesus Christ was an unbalanced person, according to the doctrine of these demons.

If demons were right, all the Prophets of God, from the Old as well as the New Testament, would be false prophets and accomplices of lie; since they all acknowledged God the Father, and all prophesied and announced Jesus Christ the Son of God. They also acknowledged a God the Father different from Jesus Christ the Son of God.

If demons were right, John the Baptist would also be a liar, because instead of presenting Jesus Christ to us as God the Father, or as the Holy Spirit, he introduced Him to us as the Lamb of God, as the Son of God. John the Baptist, who was specially sent before Jesus to prepare the way for Him, knew better than anyone who Jesus really was, and he did not hesitate to reveal to the world who Jesus was. Besides, he is the one who reveals to us that Jesus Christ is the Lamb of God, who takes away the sin of the world. If Jesus Christ were at the same time God the Father and the Holy Spirit, wouldn't John the Baptist know it? **John 1:29** *"The next day John saw Jesus coming toward him and said: Look, the Lamb of God, who takes away the sin of the world!"*

If demons were right, all the Apostles and all the Disciples of Jesus Christ who spoke of God the Father, would either be liars or mentally ill; because they all taught of a God the Father different from Jesus Christ the Son of God. If demons were right, salvation in Jesus Christ would not exist; because a Jesus liar, or impostor, or schizophrenic, cannot save us. **And if demons are right, let us eat and drink, for tomorrow we die.**

### **2.35- Let's admit for a few minutes that the demons are right**

Let us admit for a few minutes that these agents of Hell are right. Let us follow their lead in their error. Let us reason a bit with these demons. Let us try to oppose their doctrine to the logic to see what it would look like, or where it would lead us. In order to get there, we will examine a few verses from the Bible, and their implications in the light of this doctrine of the sons of the devil that maintains that Jesus Christ has no Father, and that He Himself would be His own Father.

**John 20:21** *"Again Jesus said: Peace be with you! As the Father has sent me, I am sending you."*

If Jesus has no Father as the demons teach us, it means that He Himself is His own Father; it also means that it is He who sent Himself. If Jesus Christ is His own Father, it means that we also are Jesus Christ. If Jesus Christ Himself is the Father who sent Him, it means that we also are Jesus Christ who sent us. And if Jesus Christ were not sent by His Father, it means that we also Servants of God have not been sent by Jesus. According to this satanic logic, the one who sent Jesus is no other than Jesus Himself, therefore, he who sent us will be no other than we ourselves.

We can go even further in this reasoning, and rewrite this verse. This is what it would be: *"Again Jesus said: Peace be with you! **As I have sent myself, I myself am sending you.**"* It's your turn to conclude.

**Revelation 3:21** *"To him who overcomes I will grant to sit with Me on My throne, as I also overcame and sat down with My Father on His throne."*

The Lord tells us here that if we overcome, He will grant us to sit with Him on His throne, as He also overcame and sat down with His Father on His Father's throne. If Jesus Christ is His own Father, it means that when He says that He sat after His victory with His Father on the throne of His Father, He is in fact talking about Himself. He then sat down with Himself on the throne; and in that case, we also who will sit down with Jesus on His throne, are all Jesus Christ, and we will sit with ourselves on the throne.

We can go even further in this reasoning, and rewrite this verse. This is what it would be: *"To him who overcomes I will grant to sit **with Me on My throne, as I also overcame and sat down with Myself on My throne.**"* It is your turn to conclude.

**John 20:17** *"Jesus said to her, **"Do not cling to Me, for I have not yet ascended to My Father; but go to My brethren and say to them, I am ascending to My Father and your Father, and to My God and your God."**"*

If Jesus Christ when He talks about His Father, instead talks about Himself, it means that when He talks about our Father, He instead talks about ourselves. If Jesus Christ is then the Father, it means that we also are the Father. And if Jesus Christ when He talks about His God, instead talks about Himself, it means that when He talks about our God, He instead talks about ourselves. If Jesus Christ is then God the Father, it means that we also are God the Father.

If Jesus Christ when He talks about His Father, it's just a way of speaking, since He Himself would be the Father, it means that when He talks about our Father, it's also a way of speaking, for we ourselves would be the Father. If then Jesus Christ is the Father, it means that we too are the Father. And likewise, if Jesus Christ when He speaks of His God, it's just a way of speaking, since He Himself would be His own God, it means that when He talks about our God, it's also a way of speaking, for we ourselves would be our God. If then Jesus Christ is God the Father, it means that we also are God the Father.

Therefore, if Jesus Christ while ascending to His Father actually ascends to Himself, it means that when we also will ascend to our Father after death or through the Rapture, we will ascend to ourselves. And if Jesus Christ while ascending to His God, actually ascends to Himself, it means that when we also will ascend to our God after death or through the Rapture, we will ascend to ourselves. We can go even further in this reasoning, and rewrite this verse. This is what it would be: *"Jesus said to her, **"Do not cling to Me, for I have not yet ascended to Myself; but go to My brethren and say to them, I am ascending to Myself and your Father, and to Myself and your God."**"* It's your turn to conclude.

## 2.36- And if Jesus Christ were himself the Holy Spirit!

And if Jesus Christ, besides being Himself His own Father, were also Himself the Holy Spirit as the demons want to make us believe, this is what it would look like:

**John 16:13-15** *"But when He, the Spirit of truth, comes, he will guide you into all truth. He will not speak on his own; he will speak only what he hears, and he will tell you what is yet to come. ... <sup>15</sup>All that belongs to the Father is mine. That is why I said the Spirit will take from what is mine and make it known to you."*

Knowing that He in this verse is the Holy Spirit, and knowing that the Holy Spirit is the Spirit of truth, and considering according to the demons that the Holy Spirit is Jesus, and that the Father is also Jesus, this is how we will rewrite this passage: John 16:13-15 But when Jesus, Jesus, comes, Jesus will guide you into all truth. He will not speak on his own; he will speak only what he hears, and he will tell you what is yet to come. ... <sup>15</sup>All that belongs to Jesus is Jesus'. That is why Jesus said Jesus will take from what is Jesus and make it known to you.

**John 14:16** *"And I will pray the Father, and He shall give you another Comforter, that He may abide with you for ever."*

Knowing that the Comforter is the Holy Spirit, and considering according to the demons that the Holy Spirit is Jesus, and that the Father is also Jesus, this is how we will rewrite this passage: John 14:16 "And Jesus will pray Jesus, and Jesus shall give you another Jesus, that Jesus may abide with you for ever."

**John 14:26** *"But the Comforter, the Holy Spirit, whom the Father will send in My name, He shall teach you all things, and will bring to your remembrance all the things which I have said to you."*

Knowing that the Comforter is the Holy Spirit, and considering according to the demons that the Holy Spirit is Jesus, and that the Father is also Jesus, this is how we will rewrite this passage: John 14:26 "But Jesus, Jesus, whom Jesus will send in the name of Jesus, Jesus shall teach you all things, and will bring to your remembrance all the things which Jesus have said to you."

**John 15:26** *"But when the Comforter is come, whom I will send to you from the Father, the Spirit of truth who goes forth from with the Father, he shall bear witness concerning me."*

Knowing that the Comforter is the Holy Spirit, and knowing that the Holy Spirit is the Spirit of truth, and considering according to the demons that the Holy Spirit is Jesus, and that the Father is also Jesus, this is how we will rewrite this passage: John 15:26 "But when Jesus is come, whom Jesus will send to you from Jesus, Jesus who goes forth from with Jesus, Jesus shall bear witness concerning Jesus."

**Acts 1:1-8** *"In my former book, Theophilus, I wrote about all that Jesus began to do and to teach <sup>2</sup>until the day he was taken up to heaven, after giving instructions through the Holy Spirit to the apostles he had chosen. <sup>3</sup>After his suffering, he showed himself to these men and gave many convincing proofs that he was alive. He appeared to them over a period of forty days and spoke about the kingdom of God. <sup>4</sup>On one occasion, while he was eating with them, he gave them this command: "Do not leave Jerusalem, but wait for the gift my Father promised, which you have heard me speak about. <sup>5</sup>For John baptized with water, but in a few days you will be baptized with the Holy Spirit." <sup>6</sup>So when they met together, they asked him, "Lord, are you at this time going to restore the kingdom to Israel?" <sup>7</sup>He said to them: "It is not for you to know the times or dates the Father has set by his own authority. <sup>8</sup>But you will receive power when the Holy Spirit comes on you; and you will be my witnesses in Jerusalem, and in all Judea and Samaria, and to the ends of the earth."*

Try to replace all the words in **bold underlined** by Jesus, since it is He who would be at the same time God the Father and the Holy Spirit, and you will see what happens.

**Acts 2:32-33** *"God has raised this Jesus to life, and we are all witnesses of the fact. <sup>33</sup>Exalted to the right hand of God, he has received from the Father the promised Holy Spirit and has poured out what you now see and hear."*

If it is **Jesus** who is at the same time God the Father and the Holy Spirit, this is how this verse would read: "**Jesus** has raised this **Jesus** to life, and we are all witnesses of the fact. <sup>33</sup> Exalted to the right hand of **Jesus**, **Jesus** has received from **Jesus** the promised **Jesus** and has poured out what you now see and hear."

Beloved, there are so many examples to give you that if we want to display them all, this study alone will be as bulky as the Bible, or even more. This allows you to understand the absurdity of this doctrine of demons, and this also allows you to understand that no demon will succeed in contradicting God. All those who try consciously or unconsciously to interpret the word of God in their own way, always find themselves stuck.

If these serpents that spend their time today teaching that Jesus Christ is God the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit, seem convincing sometimes, it is because they only develop their folly before ignorant people who do not meditate the word of God, but who like Catholics, let others read the Bible for them.

Beloved, this study that we have just carried out gives you another opportunity to identify some other demons that hide in the midst of God's people. Let me give you here another element of discernment that will help you recognize a few demons among God's people. But before exercising that discernment, you must show great flexibility and extreme tolerance in judgment, as we usually do.

For this, although it is well established that any true child of God finds it easy to understand the things of God, although it is well established that no true child of God can blaspheme in such a way by forcefully arguing that the Bible is false, suppose nevertheless that all these religious people who support this satanic

doctrine, are either in ignorance or simply possessed. Give them this teaching, which is well elaborated and clear enough to open their eyes.

Those among them who were rather in ignorance will be made free by the truth exposed in this teaching. And those who were simply possessed will also be made free by the truth clearly established in this teaching, because as you well know, the truth sets free. *John 8:32*. But those who, after having read all the demonstration made in this teaching, will choose not to repent, and will prefer to cling to their blasphemy, will then give you proof that they are demons. In other words, know that any so-called Christian, who after reading this teaching continues to maintain that John's baptism is false, is a demon. Do not forget that demons will never repent lest they should be saved. "... *The Spirit expressly says that in latter times **some will depart from the faith, giving heed to deceiving spirits and doctrines of demons.***" **1Timothy 4:1**.

### 2.37- The antichrists

When we tell you that these people are demons, agents of Hell, you may think that we are just strict in our judgment, or that our language is a bit harsh towards them. It is nothing of the kind. Let's see what God says about them in His word.

**1John 2:24-26** *"See that what you have heard from the beginning remains in you. If it does, you also will remain in the Son and in the Father. <sup>25</sup>And this is what he promised us - even eternal life. <sup>26</sup>I am writing these things to you **about those who are trying to lead you astray.**"* You should therefore look out for those who are trying to lead you astray by teaching you the doctrine of demons and blasphemy.

**1John 4:1-3** *"Dear friends, do not believe every spirit, but test the spirits to see whether they are from God, because many false prophets have gone out into the world. <sup>2</sup>This is how you can recognize the Spirit of God: **Every spirit that acknowledges that Jesus Christ has come in the flesh is from God,** <sup>3</sup>but every spirit that does not acknowledge Jesus is not from God. This is the spirit of the antichrist, which you have heard is coming and even now is already in the world."*

Beloved, know that all those who say that Jesus Christ is God the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit, are part of those who deny that Jesus Christ has come in the flesh. According to their doctrine, it is God the Father who came in the flesh, and not Jesus, because according to them Jesus as a Son different from God the Father does not exist. These demons are therefore these false prophets which the Bible talks about in the passage that we have just read. These are the antichrists. *"Who is the liar? It is the man who denies that Jesus is the Christ. **Such a man is the antichrist** - he denies **the Father** and the Son."* **1John 2:22**

That's what these demons do. They deny the Father and the Son. For them, God the Father does not exist, it is Jesus who is God the Father. They also deny the Son, because if it is Jesus who is God the Father, it actually means that the Son does not exist. If it is the Lord Himself who says that these people are the antichrists, you then understand. These are serpents that came from the world

of darkness with a mission to fight Christ, to oppose God, and to pervert the word of God, in order to lead a maximum of people astray. These demons are very dangerous for the Children of God.

Beloved, you must understand that all those who say that Jesus Christ is God the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit, are part of those who deny that Jesus is the Christ. By saying that Jesus is God the Father, they deny that Jesus is the Christ. According to them, Jesus is not the Christ, but God the Father. And since whoever denies the Son does not have the Father either, these people are working for their father satan. They only have one mission, fighting God, just like their father the devil does.

If you value your salvation, do no longer discuss the word of God with these sons of the evil one, otherwise you will be devoured. Remember that it is with the power of satan that they operate. That is why despite the fact that they have no biblical verse to support their blasphemy, they succeed nonetheless in deceiving a great number of people. It is the power of satan that does this work, a great power of deception and incantations. So stay away from those people, if you treasure your salvation. **1John 2:23** says: *"Whoever denies the Son does not have the **Father** either; he who acknowledges the Son has **the Father** also."*

### **2.38- Their condemnation was written about long ago**

The Lord takes particular care to tell you that whoever denies the Son does not have the Father either. You thus understand very well that these people do not have God at all. They are antichrists, that is, demons. The Bible tells us in the book of Jude that: *"For certain men **whose condemnation was written about long ago** have secretly slipped in among you. They are godless men, who change the grace of our God into a license for immorality and **deny Jesus Christ our only Sovereign and Lord.**"* **Jude 4.**

You have therefore understood it. These are men whose condemnation was written about long ago, ungodly men, demons, who will never change, no matter what you do. Perform any demonstration as we have just done through this study and all these research that we have carried out, they will not in the least be impressed. Give them several hundreds of verses that say word for word without the need for interpretation, that Jesus Christ is neither God the Father, nor the Holy Spirit. They will not repent, even though faced with this thousand verses they have none, not even one that they can present without twisting it, to support their blasphemy. ***You give them a thousand verses, they do not give you any, but they do not change.*** This is because their condemnation was written about long ago.

Many Christians do not understand the seriousness and dangerousness of the blasphemy of these sons of the devil. They go as far as to believe that these people can deny the Son, but still have the Father and vice versa. This is not possible. Renounce this kind of naivety, and understand that God cannot get the judgment wrong. If it is the Lord Himself who tells us that these people are the antichrists, it means that He knows what He is talking about. So be very careful from now on. And if you do not want to end up in Hell, ***learn not to go beyond what is written.***

### 2.39- They are kept in darkness, bound with everlasting chains

**Jude 5-6** says: *"Though you already know all this, I want to remind you that the Lord delivered his people out of Egypt, but later destroyed **those who did not believe**. <sup>6</sup>... These he has **kept in darkness, bound with everlasting chains** for judgment on the great Day."* These people are unbelievers. They do not believe. They are bound with everlasting chains under darkness. The judgment of the great day is reserved for them. If you insist and choose to associate with the blasphemy of those unbelievers, you will share their fate. The choice is yours.

I told you in the teaching on Discernment that God in His greatness, to demonstrate that He is truly the Almighty, has constructed His word so as to leave no possibility for satan people to freely entertain themselves. God who knows these demons very well has carefully planned everything in His word to silence them. The Lord has made the necessary arrangements in order not to give the least opportunity to demons to use His word to blaspheme. Everything is in the word of God to confound the serpents, and dismantle all their false doctrines.

Therefore, it is only those who do not meditate the word of God, on the one hand, and those whose heart and mind are corrupted and perverted, on the other hand, who fall into the trap of these sons of perdition. The true Children of God who are obedient to their Lord and who meditate the word of God day and night, and all those whose hearts are right, will never believe in false doctrine conveyed by agents of Hell. The true Children of God recognize the voice of their God and they follow Him. They will stand firm till the end. ***"Watch out that you do not lose what you have worked for, but that you may be rewarded fully."*** 2John 8.

Let us now examine some of the passages that we have selected in the reports of the research studies that we have undertaken. We had so many passages to justify and uphold this teaching that sorting them out has not been easy. We have nevertheless managed to select a few to help those who still want to understand to understand, ***and to condemn those who have chosen Hell.***

### 2.40- Appeal to common sense

**John 8:38** *"I speak what I have seen with My Father, and you do what you have seen with your father."* Let us appeal to common sense and let's analyze this verse in the light of the doctrine of these demons who said that when Jesus speaks about His Father, He speaks of Himself. If the father is not different from the son, it means that the Father of Jesus is Jesus Himself, and the father of the Jews is the Jews themselves. If the doctrine of these demons is true, and that Jesus is Himself God the Father, it means that the Jews themselves are the devil. If Jesus is His own Father, it means that the Jews themselves are their own father. Conclusion, ***Jesus Christ is God the Father, and the Jews are the devil.*** A God the Father other than Jesus would not exist, and a devil other than the Jews would not exist.

### 2.41- What to do from now on?



Beloved, next time that a demon will tell you that Jesus Christ is Himself God the Father and the Holy Spirit, ask him to show you in the **Holy Bible** a single passage in which Jesus said so. Do not allow these serpents to twist the passages quoted above to make them say what they do not say. To prove to you that **Jesus Christ is the Son of God**, we did not need to twist any verse, and we did not attempt to put some interpretation on the verses, we let them say what they say. We only read with you the verses as they are written. Examples:

**Matthew 16:16-17** "Simon Peter answered and said, **"You are the Christ, the Son of the living God."** <sup>17</sup>**Jesus answered and said to him, "Blessed are you, Simon Bar-Jonah, for flesh and blood has not revealed this to you, but My Father who is in Heaven."** **Matthew 26:63-64** "But Jesus kept silent. And the high priest answered and said to Him, **"I put You under oath by the living God: Tell us if You are the Christ, the Son of God!"** <sup>64</sup>**Jesus said to him, "It is as you said. Nevertheless, I say to you, hereafter you will see the Son of Man sitting at the right hand of the Power, and coming on the clouds of heaven."** **Mark 1:1** "The beginning of the gospel of Jesus Christ, the **Son of God.**"

**John 5:25-26** "Most assuredly, I say to you, the hour is coming, and now is, when the dead will hear the voice of the **Son of God**; and those who hear will live. <sup>26</sup>"For as the **Father** has life in Himself, so He has granted the **Son** to have life in Himself." **John 9:35-37** "**Jesus** heard that they had cast him out; and when He had found him, He said to him, **"Do you believe in the Son of God?"** <sup>36</sup>He answered and said, **"Who is He, Lord, that I may believe in Him?"** <sup>37</sup>And Jesus said to him, **"You have both seen Him and it is He who is talking with you."** **John 10:36** "Do you say of Him whom **the Father** sanctified and sent into the world, 'You are blaspheming,' because I said, '**I am the Son of God**'?"

**John 11:4** "When Jesus heard that, He said, "This sickness is not unto death, but for the glory of **God**, that the **Son of God** may be glorified through it." **John 20:17** "Jesus said to her, "Do not cling to Me, for **I have not yet ascended to My Father**; but go to My brethren and say to them, '**I am ascending to My Father and your Father, and to My God and your God**'. " **2Corinthians 1:19** "For **the Son of God, Jesus Christ**, who was preached among you by us - by me, Silvanus, and Timothy - was not Yes and No, but in Him was Yes."

These are just a few verses that I have given you, without adding anything, without attempting to explain, without trying to analyze, in short without doing anything else. You simply have to read these verses, and you will see for yourself how it is written in black and white that Jesus is the Son of God.

Beloved, in the same way you have seen me doing, ask these serpents to show you without attempting to explain or interpret anything whatsoever, **a single passage wherein it is written that Jesus is Himself God the Father and the Holy Spirit**. In this work that we have just undertaken, we have given you **several hundreds of verses**, which tell you clearly that Jesus Christ is the Son of God, and that He is neither God the Father, nor the Holy Spirit. In order to convince you, we did not embark on assumptions. We did not go beyond what is clearly written. We did not resort to any subterfuge to prove to you the doctrine of Christ. Our teaching is crystal clear as you can confirm.

Now, ask these demons to do as we did. Ask them to prove to you without resorting to subterfuges, their doctrine that says that Jesus is Himself God the Father and the Holy Spirit. Although we have produced hundreds of verses to support our teaching, do not ask them hundreds of verses. **Ask them only one verse.** Since they are intelligent, since they know better than God does, let them produce a single verse, just one, which says that Jesus is God the Father and the Holy Spirit. And if they give you such a verse in the **Holy Bible**, do not hesitate to contact us in order for us to repent.

## 2.42- Warning

Beloved, I have already told you that you should never fall into the trap of answering questions, which are addressed to God. You are not God, and you are not there to take the questions of demons to God. But even if these questions were addressed to us, it is high time you understood that we are not obliged to answer the questions of the demons. Let this message be clear once and for all. By trying to save them, these sons of the evil one eventually believe that we are there to do their will. By their craftiness they have tied us down to the grass like goats, and through human compassion, we find ourselves grazing it.

Once this teaching that is clear enough is put at the disposal of the people of God, do no longer answer anyone's questions on this subject. This teaching is clear and complete enough to free and deliver all those who had problems with this topic, and all who were in this false doctrine through ignorance or incantations. Remember that there are people that you will never succeed in saving. It is for this reason that the Lord Jesus called them **serpents, brood of vipers, son of the devil, son of the evil one**, etc. Jesus knew them very well.

**Conclusion:** Know once and for all that **Jesus has never been God the Father**, and besides, He will never be. **Jesus Christ is simply the Son of God**, and He is God by decree or by simple declaration of the Father. And He is not the only one to have benefited from this grace of the Father. Therefore, all those who consider Jesus as another God to have two or more Gods, are mistaken. If we were to speak of Jesus in terms of a second God, it means that we are going to end up with thousands of Gods. Because as we have demonstrated to you earlier, Moses was declared God by the Father, and even we as mere men were declared gods by the Father.

Neither Jesus, nor Moses, nor us can dispute the place of God. We have several things in common. Jesus, Moses, and all the Children of God all have several things in common. They all have the same Father, God the Father. They all have the same God, God the Father. They are all Servants of God. **Acts 3:13** *"The God of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, the God of our fathers, glorified His Servant Jesus, whom you delivered up and denied in the presence of Pilate, when he was determined to let Him go."*

Do not forget that the Lord Jesus Himself promised us that if we overcome, we will sit with Him on His throne, as He also overcame and sat down with His Father on the throne of His Father. **Revelation 3:21**. With that, you understand everything.

Also remember the caveat we have given you in respect of the serpents who have already abandon the Holy Bible to make their version of the satanic bible. You should never discuss with those people. They will certainly consider inserting in their new editions of satanic bible some passages that will help them, from now on, conceal this confusion that we have just inflicted on them. Their confusion is great at present.

This teaching has exposed them. May the Lord be glorified! They did not expect us to corner them in this way. ***Now that they realize that they have no verse to justify their satanic doctrine without detours and big lies, they will insert in the next editions of their bibles, one or a few verses saying that their "jesus" is at the same time "their god the father", and their "holy spirit".*** Therefore, if you have a version of their satanic bible in which they have not yet done this montage, keep it for reference.

Also look out for all these demons who, even after having read this teaching, choose not to repent, and persist in conveying their same satanic doctrine. These people are extremely dangerous. You must stay away from them, if you treasure your salvation. You should never fall into the trap of discussing the word of God again with this kind of serpents, lest you get infected by their venom. Do not underestimate their power of deception, and the power of their incantations. These types of serpents are not like the others. They are fearsome agents of satan, and that is why the Lord Himself warns us against them. Listen to what the Lord tells us about these agents of Hell:

**2John 9-10** *"Anyone who runs ahead and does not continue in the teaching of Christ does not have God; whoever continues in the teaching has both the Father and the Son. <sup>10</sup>If anyone comes to you and does not bring this teaching, do not take him into your house or welcome him."*

Why does the Lord ask us to stay away from these serpents? It is because He knows them. He knows the power of nuisance of these vipers. If you think that God can be wrong, keep listening to these demons. The day you find yourself in Hell with them, you will understand. In the meantime, you have been warned! *"Do not be deceived: Evil company corrupts good habits."* **1Corinthians 15:33.**

## 2.43- Summary of the teaching

Let's try beloved, to summarize in a few words this teaching. In order to convince ourselves, although we have never had any problem with this teaching, and convince all the other Christians, including those who by misfortune have been disturbed by this doctrine of demons, we found as the only real solution, to seek the position of all the spiritual actors concerned by this case. These actors are: ***God the Father, Jesus Christ Himself, the Angels of God, the Apostles and the other Servants of God, the devil, and the demons in spirit.***

We have neglected no actor, and we have concealed none of their testimonies. It is therefore a pure, an undiluted, a comprehensive and thorough teaching, which cannot be disputed, that we put at your disposal. This teaching can only be disputed if the Bible is false. The testimonies of the various actors that we have gathered are recorded in the reports of the twelve research studies we

have undertaken. Therefore, you should try to read these reports, because they form an integral part of this teaching.

We consulted **God the Father** to find out what He knows about this case. He told us that as far as He is concerned, Jesus Christ is His only begotten Son, in whom He is well pleased. We also asked the Angels of God what they knew about Jesus. They **acknowledged that Jesus Christ is the Son of God**. (See *Seventh Research*).

We consulted **Jesus Christ** to ask Him whether He had a Father. He told us yes. (See *First Research*).

We again consulted **Jesus Christ** to ask Him whether He had a God. The answer was still positive. (See *Second Research*).

We consulted **the Apostles and the other Disciples of Jesus Christ** to ask them whether they knew **God the Father** different from **Jesus Christ**. They said yes. (See *Third Research*).

We still went back to **Jesus Christ** to ask Him whether He Himself was God the Father and the Holy Spirit, He told us no. (See *Fifth Research*).

We seized the same opportunity to check with the **Apostles and the other Disciples of Jesus Christ** if Jesus Christ their Master was at the same time **God the Father and the Holy Spirit**. They told us that they did not even know what we were talking about. (See *Sixth Research*).

We then asked the **Apostles and the other Disciples who Jesus really was in their eyes**. They told us that **Jesus is the Christ, the Son of the living God**. (See *Fourth Research*).

We also went to satan to ask him whether **Jesus Christ** is at the same time **God the Father and the Holy Spirit**. He also seemed not to know what we were talking about. (See *Eighth Research*).

We then asked him, **who was Jesus in his eyes**. He acknowledged that **Jesus is the Son of God**. (See *Ninth Research*).

We also found it better to ask the demons in spirit, **who was Jesus in their eyes**. They all acknowledged that **Jesus is the Son of God, the Son of the Most High God**. (See *Tenth Research*).

And since the right hand of God also seemed to be another problem for some sons of the evil one to whom God cannot have a right hand, we had to check this. The Holy Bible has confirmed to us that God really has a right hand. God Himself talks about it, and so are His Prophets. (See *Eleventh Research*).

We also embarked on another research, which seems trivial and unimportant at first sight, the counting of the number of chapters and verses of the Bible. (See *twelfth research*).

## 2.44- Conclusion of the Research

It emerges from these research studies that God the Father Himself acknowledges that He has an only begotten Son named Jesus Christ; that Jesus Christ knows He is the Son of God; that the Angels of God all acknowledge that Jesus Christ is the Son of God; that the Apostles and the other Servants of God all acknowledge that Jesus Christ is the Son of God; that satan and all his demons in spirit all acknowledge that Jesus Christ is the Son of God; and that none of them recognizes Jesus as being God the Father; and that none of them recognizes Jesus as being the Holy Spirit; that the Bible acknowledges that God has a right hand; and that the Holy Bible contains 1,189 chapters and 31,102 verses, and that none of these thousands of verses says that Jesus Christ is God the Father and the Holy Spirit.

These demons in the flesh who then contradict God the Father, Jesus Christ, the Angels of God, the Apostles and the other Servants of God, and even satan their father, and all his demons in spirit, will tell us where and from whom their doctrine comes. If you doubt our research studies, undertake yours, and send us their reports. Ensure that you only limit yourselves to the Holy Bible as we did. It is important to remind every body that the Holy Bible has 66 books, classified in the following order:

**Old Testament:** Genesis, Exodus, Leviticus, Numbers, Deuteronomy, Joshua, Judges, Ruth, 1Samuel, 2Samuel, 1Kings, 2Kings, 1Chronicles, 2Chronicles, Ezra, Nehemiah, Esther, Job, Psalms, Proverbs, Ecclesiastes, Song of Solomon, Isaiah, Jeremiah, Lamentations, Ezekiel, Daniel, Hosea, Joel, Amos, Obadiah, Jonah, Micah, Nahum, Habakkuk, Zephaniah, Haggai, Zechariah, Malachi. **Total 39 books.**

**New Testament:** Matthew, Mark, Luke, John, Acts, Romans, 1Corinthians, 2Corinthians, Galatians, Ephesians, Philippians, Colossians, 1Thessalonians, 2Thessalonians, 1Timothy, 2Timothy, Titus, Philemon, Hebrews, James, 1Peter, 2Peter, 1John, 2John, 3John, Jude, Revelation. **Total 27 books.**

## **2.45- How is it that the existence of the Father of Jesus Christ becomes a problem?**

We found it better to ask ourselves again some of the questions we asked in the study entitled ***Is Jesus Christ God?*** as the two subjects are alike. Just as the study entitled ***Is Jesus Christ God?*** this study was not really necessary. This is because there are things that should not be taught to true Children of God. There are things that true Children of God should understand naturally and simply.

How is it that the existence of the Father of Jesus Christ becomes a problem even in the midst of so-called Christians? Yet this topic is so clear in the Bible. ***How is it that even the so-called Christians can believe and even attempt to demonstrate that the Bible is false?***

As you have just noticed, every part of the Bible proves that Jesus Christ has a Father, and each book of the Bible proves that Jesus Christ has a Father. Going as far as to make efforts to prove to Children of God that Jesus Christ their Master, their Lord, their Saviour, their Redeemer, their Shepherd, their Guide,

their Shield, their God, ... is indeed the Son of God as He Himself testifies, is simply absurd. Because if Jesus Christ had no Father, if Jesus Christ had no God, what would become of the Children of God?

Imagine for a single moment that Jesus Christ is just a liar when He tells us that He has a Father, and try to understand the consequences. Let me explain to you the meaning of this satanic doctrine that says that Jesus Christ has no Father. This doctrine is simply trying to teach the whole world that God has never existed, that the Bible is false, and that all those who died from early generations for God or for Jesus Christ, all died in vain. That is what this satanic doctrine means.

## 2.46- If Jesus Christ has no Father

I embarked on a series of drills earlier to help you better understand the seriousness of this satanic doctrine according to which Jesus Christ would not have a Father. That is what I will still try to do below. This abomination is a blasphemy that is just as great as the one that denies the Divinity of Christ.

If Jesus Christ has no Father, it means that all those who believe in Him for their salvation are all lost, because they would just be believing in a liar, in an impostor, and in a mentally ill person.

If Jesus Christ has no Father, it means that those who worship Him are all idolaters, since they would in fact be worshiping a liar, an impostor, and a mentally ill. And that is idolatry. Idolatry is a sin that leads straight to Hell. Those who follow Jesus Christ will all go to Hell, according to this doctrine of demons.

If Jesus Christ has no Father, it means that the whole Bible is false, since it teaches, from the Old to the New Testament, that Jesus Christ has a Father.

If Jesus Christ has no Father, it means that God is a liar, He who said that ***Jesus Christ is His beloved Son, in whom He is well pleased.***

**Matthew 3:16-17** *"When He had been baptized, Jesus came up immediately from the water; and behold, the heavens were opened to Him, and He saw the Spirit of God descending like a dove and alighting upon Him. <sup>17</sup>And suddenly a voice came from heaven, saying: **This is My beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased.**"*

If you try to rewrite this verse in the light of the doctrine of demons that maintains that it is Jesus Himself who is the Holy Spirit, this is what it would be: *"When He had been baptized, Jesus came up immediately from the water; and behold, the heavens were opened to Him, and Jesus saw Jesus descending like a dove and alighting upon Jesus."* It's your turn to conclude.

And that's not all. Since according to these demons neither God the Father nor the Holy Spirit exist, and it is Jesus Himself who is at the same time God the Father and the Holy Spirit. Here we see Jesus in the water being baptized, we see the heavens opened, and this same Jesus descending like a dove and alighting upon Jesus. And we also hear this same Jesus talking from heaven, saying, *"This is My beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased."*

For you, so-called Christians who support this doctrine of lucifer, and who hold that Jesus Christ has no Father, and would be Himself His own Father, you have now understood very well the gravity of the sin you were committing. ***You should repent immediately if you are of God, or persist in your opinion, if you are demons.***

We, Children of God, say that we have given our lives to Jesus. If Jesus Christ is an impostor, if He is not who He tells us that He is, it means that we are all lost.

We, Children of God, say that we have been saved by Jesus Christ, and that this same Jesus Christ lives in us. If Jesus Christ is just a mentally ill, it means that not only are we not saved, but we are also all possessed by the spirit of schizophrenia.

We, Children of God, say that Jesus Christ is coming very soon to take us away. If Jesus Christ is only a liar, there will be no Rapture. Because a mere liar cannot have the power and sufficient might to take us away.

***I take this opportunity to give you a very important element of discernment, which will help you to never again fall into the trap of the agents of satan, these deceivers who disguise themselves as Christians or as servants of God, to turn God's Children away from the path of eternal life.***

Those who say that Jesus Christ has no Father can be classified into two groups: People who are possessed and demons in the flesh. You will therefore never, I mean **never**, see a true child of God, maintaining that Jesus Christ is only a pathetic impostor who spent all His time telling people that He was the Son of God, whereas He would in fact be God the Father, and even the Holy Spirit, according to the doctrine of demons. No true child of God can utter such blasphemy.

This kind of blasphemy can only come from a demon. Either he who says this is possessed by a demon that uses him to blaspheme, or he himself is a demon. What you need to do in order to discern is simply to give him this teaching to read. If he is not a demon, he will repent after reading the teaching. And if he is a demon, he will be persistent. He will not repent. Demons are people who have pledged their allegiance to lucifer. They have chosen Hell, and you cannot do anything against that. This is what the Bible teaches us:

**Matthew 13:14-15** *"In them is fulfilled the prophecy of Isaiah: You will be ever hearing but never understanding; you will be ever seeing but never perceiving. <sup>15</sup>For **this people's heart has become calloused; they hardly hear with their ears, and they have closed their eyes. Otherwise they might see with their eyes, hear with their ears, understand with their hearts and turn, and I would heal them.**"*

## **2.47- By this you shall know the demons**

Other elements of discernment emerge from this series of research studies that we have just undertaken, that is, a few points that will allow us to recognize some demons in the so-called Christian milieu.

If you come across so-called **enlightened Christians** who argue that the Bible has more than 66 books, or less, know that you are dealing with demons.

If you come across so-called **enlightened Christians** who maintain that God has asked them to make a new Bible, know that you are dealing with demons.

If you come across so-called **enlightened Christians** who maintain that Jesus Christ is not God, know that you are dealing with demons.

If you come across so-called **enlightened Christians** who maintain that it is Jesus Christ Himself who is God the Father, the Son and the Holy Spirit, know that you are dealing with demons.

Why do some Christians believe so easily in all these heresies that the agents of Hell teach these days? It is because they have forsaken God. Truly, those who abide in God, and those in whom the Spirit of God dwells, generally have no problem knowing God, and understanding Him. We have enough examples in the Bible.

Those who claim to be of God, but who oppose Him, are simply not His. For those who truly have the Spirit of God never oppose God. No true child of God can fail to recognise his Creator to the point of blaspheming like these agents of satan who are behind this false doctrine that we are correcting.

Let me appeal once more to the common sense of all those who already call themselves Christians, and who believe that Jesus Christ is at the same time God the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit.

Dear friends who are still in this kind of satanic reasoning, wake up quickly, and repent. Your doctrine is of lucifer. How can a Christian who believes that Jesus is the Saviour of mankind believe at the same time that this same Jesus is just a liar, an impostor, and a mentally ill person?

You, true Children of God, leave blasphemies, fruitless debates, and vain discussions, which are unique to people of corrupt mind, to those outside the Church. There are subjects that should not cause any doubt in the mind of someone who claims to be a Christian. Everything in the Bible convinces us of the existence of the Father of our Master Jesus Christ.

Be it the teaching entitled **"Is Jesus Christ God?"** or this teaching, what is difficult to understand? What is so difficult to necessitate endless debates? Remember once again that only children of satan find it difficult to understand or accept the word of God. The word of God is limpid and very easy to understand for true Children of God, and for all those in whom the Spirit of God dwells.

As you can notice through the reports of the different research studies we carried out, Jesus spoke of the Father or of His Father more than 200 times in the Bible. And even when people accused Him of calling God His Father, He did not deny it. Jesus spoke of God or of His God more than 130 times in the Bible. The Apostles and the other Disciples spoke of the Father or of God the Father more than 440 times in the Bible, and they all agreed that Jesus Christ is the Son of



God. They said that Jesus is the Son of God at least 110 times in the Bible. God the Father, God's Angels, satan and his demons, have all said on several occasions that Jesus is the Son of God.

***On the contrary, Jesus has never declared in the Bible to be God the Father, not even once. And He has never declared either to be the Holy Spirit, not even once. The Apostles and the other Disciples have never declared that Jesus Christ was His own Father or the Holy Spirit; not even once.*** God the Father, God's Angels, satan and his demons have never declared it either, **not even once**. None of them, on no occasion, has declared that Jesus is God the Father and/or the Holy Spirit.

Don't you find it surprising that ***Jesus Christ being God the Father, makes no mention of it, not even once in the whole Bible?*** Don't you find it surprising that ***Jesus Christ being the Holy Spirit, makes no mention of it, not even once in the whole Bible?*** Unless of course He were ignorant of who He was, or He is ignorant of who He is. And even if Jesus were ignorant of who He was, how is it that all the others are all ignorant at the same time? Would God the Father be equally ignorant? Would God's Angels also be that ignorant? Would satan also be ignorant of the fact that Jesus is at the same time God the Father and the Holy Spirit? Would his demons be ignorant too?

Do I still need further evidence to convince you that those who argue that it is Jesus Christ who is at the same time God the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit are demons in the flesh? Do you really think that these demons know more than Jesus Himself who Jesus would or would not be? Keep this in mind: ***"Though you grind a fool in a mortar with a pestle along with crushed grain, yet his foolishness will not depart from him."*** Proverbs 27:22.

## **2.48- Can there be true Children of God in this sect?**

One can ask oneself whether a true child of God can find himself in this satanic sect, if yes how, and why. The answer is yes. A true child of God can find himself in these sects, and I would not be surprised if there were many of them in the midst of these demons who support this blasphemy. How is that possible?

For all of you who have believed in the truth or in the true Gospel, you rightly wonder how a normal person can believe this kind of blasphemy that no verse in the Bible supports. But this is not the case for those Christians who have had the misfortune to believe in the midst of these demons. They have only known this doctrine, with all the deceptions that go along with it, not forgetting the numerous incantations of the agents of Hell, which give to this satanic doctrine a semblance of common sense for anyone who has no discernment.

***Until this study was carried out and we demonstrated that there is no verse in the Bible that supports this blasphemy, these Christians were convinced that there were many verses that supported their doctrine,*** because the demons that turn them away from God use several verses, which they twist to justify their lies. And these ignorant Christians then believe to have verses that prove their teaching. This is why when you talk with them, they

recite to you the same verses taken out of context, and with circuitous meaning as evidence of their doctrine.

It is now that they will realize that, in fact, there is no verse in the Bible that supports their blasphemy. It is the demonstration that the Lord has just made through this study that will finally open their eyes. It is now that these ignorant Christians could be set free. Therefore, do not be surprised at all the commotion in the camp of satan since we embarked on this study. As soon as one of these satanic groups that convey this doctrine of demons was informed by one of their colleagues serpents that we were about to deconstruct their satanic doctrine, by preparing a teaching that would be made available to all, panic seized these sons of the devil. Knowing that this satanic doctrine is their only stock in trade, they know that once their lie has been dismantled, they will no longer have anything to say. They know it very well, and that is why they are getting so agitated. They have completely lost sleep.

Therefore, know that there may be some sincere people in the midst of these demons. It is in fact the main purpose for which the Lord has allowed us to carry out this study, which seemed to be a waste of time for us. There are therefore some captives to deliver, and they will all be set free by this teaching in the name of Jesus. Now that your question is answered, let me expand on these other points that will deliver our brethren.

### **2.49- Other important points to understand**

After the demonstration of truth that we have just given through this study in order to save the Children of God caught in the trap of this false doctrine, the Lord revealed to me some other important points that must absolutely be well explained to totally free His Children. It's the concept of the plurality of Gods, of the image of the man in relation to God, and of the difference that exists between Jesus Christ and lucifer.

Although the concept of many Gods has already been elaborated above, the Lord has laid on my heart to come back to it, by developing new aspects that will complete the teaching. This notion is particularly important since these sons of the evil one succeed every time in clinging to it to disturb a few weak-minded. As soon as these sorcerers do no longer know how to convey their lie, they surf on the fibre of the plurality of Gods. It is this fibre that these demons vibrate whenever they want to sow confusion in the minds of unstable people who fall into the trap of listening to them.

The fibre of the plurality of Gods therefore remains the bomb that these sorcerers have and of which they are sure that whenever it is released, all those who listen to them will be troubled. By the grace of God, we will bring down this stronghold by the word of God, and help the Children of God to understand once and for all this notion, as well as the image of the man in relation to God, and the difference that exists between Jesus Christ and lucifer.

All those who are in this satanic doctrine out of ignorance, and all those who have already listened to this doctrine and who are constantly haunted by the

incantations related to the sorcery of these sorcerers, will be delivered by these explanations that I will develop. In addition to all the evidence that the Lord has just given them through all the research studies we have undertaken, these explanations will totally destroy the power of blindness that chained them.

### 2.50- Deliverance of the Children of God stuck in this satanic sect

For you dear brethren, who are in this satanic doctrine out of ignorance, this is an element by which the demons hold you captive. It's this notion of Father and Son who are one. Demons try every time to tell you that if the Son says that He is in the Father, and that the Father is in Him, it means that the Son Himself is the Father. This is one of the passages that these demons use to confuse you:

**John 14:7-11** *"If you really knew me, you would know my Father as well. From now on, you do know him and have seen him."* <sup>8</sup>Philip said, "Lord, show us the Father and that will be enough for us." <sup>9</sup>Jesus answered: "Don't you know me, Philip, even after I have been among you such a long time? **Anyone who has seen me has seen the Father.** How can you say, "Show us the Father"? <sup>10</sup>Don't you believe that I am in the Father, and that the Father is in me? The words I say to you are not just my own. Rather, it is the Father, living in me, who is doing his work. <sup>11</sup>Believe me when I say that I am in the Father and the Father is in me; or at least believe on the evidence of the miracles themselves."

Sorcerers twist this passage, and say that since Jesus said to Philip that anyone who sees Him has seen the Father, this means that Jesus is God the Father. Do not be disturbed by this deception, beloved. Let me deconstruct this madness for you. Let me prove to you that the wisdom of God brings all the reasoning of the demons to nought.

### 2.51- Man is the image of God

**Genesis 1:26-27** *"Then God said, "Let Us make man in Our image, according to Our likeness; let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, over the birds of the air, and over the cattle, over all the earth and over every creeping thing that creeps on the earth." <sup>27</sup>So **God created man in His own image; in the image of God He created him; male and female He created them.**"*

We were created in the image of God. This clearly means that whoever sees us has an idea of what God is like. If then we, mere men, are the image of God, and can present to those who see us an image of this true God, how much more so the only Son of God, who is the perfect image of God? **Jesus Christ as God's only Son is the perfect image of God.** It is thus simply logical and natural that anyone who sees Jesus sees the Father, without Jesus being the Father. Satan's children do not understand anything because they have darkened mind. *"And even if our gospel is veiled, it is veiled to those who are perishing. <sup>4</sup>The god of this age has blinded the minds of unbelievers, so that they cannot see the light of the gospel of the glory of Christ, **who is the image of God.**"* **2Corinthians 4:3-4.**

Let me give you another proof that we are the image of God. Let's read the following passage: **Genesis 18:1-33** *"The Lord appeared to Abraham near the great trees of Mamre while he was sitting at the entrance to his tent in the heat of the day. <sup>2</sup>Abraham looked up and saw three men standing nearby. When he saw them, he hurried from the entrance of his tent to meet them and bowed low to the ground. <sup>3</sup>He said, if I have found favour in your eyes, my lord, do not pass your servant by. <sup>4</sup>Let a little water be brought, and then you may all wash your feet and rest under this tree. ... <sup>13</sup>Then the Lord said to Abraham, why did Sarah laugh and say, "Will I really have a child, now that I am old?" <sup>14</sup>Is anything too hard for the Lord? I will return to you at the appointed time next year, and Sarah will have a son..."*

As you have just read in this passage of Genesis 18, three men visited Abraham, amongst whom the Lord. It is not in a dream that Abraham received the Lord, it was real. And Abraham received men who really had the shape and the image of men that you and I are. He received them as one would receive ordinary men, offering them what one would offer to ordinary men. This is here another proof that God created man in His own image. We are therefore the image of God.

I am almost certain that if I stood before the brethren today and said: "Look at me. If you see me you have seen God", almost all of them would be shocked. They would certainly say that I have gone off my head, or that I have allowed pride to take hold of me. Yet beloved, even if we do not often make such statements, making them would not at all amount to a blasphemy or a sin. We are the image of God. And if we had considered ourselves as such, there are acts that we would never commit. But we forget that we are gods created in the image of God, and we fall like one of the princes, and die like men.

If we were to tell anyone today that if he sees us he has seen the Father, we would not be blaspheming. Our Master Jesus Christ is the image of God, and we also are the image of God. Saying or affirming it would neither be pretence, nor pride. Indeed, God has created us in His own image. Yet, this does not make us God the Father. And we will never say that we are God the Father. The same is true of Jesus Christ. He who sees Him has indeed seen God the Father, since He is the image of God the Father. But He is not God the Father, and He has never said that He is God the Father, since He Himself knows that He is not.

When sorcerers twist the passage of John 14:7-11, to say that since Jesus said to Philip that anyone who sees Him has seen the Father, this means that Jesus is God the Father, **they forget that in this same passage in verses 10 and 11, Jesus made it clear that He is not God the Father, clearly indicating that He is in the Father, and that the Father is in Him.** If Jesus were God the Father, God the Father would not be in God the Father. God the Father cannot be in Himself. God the Father can only be in someone else. The same is true of Jesus and us. Jesus is in us, and we are in Him. Jesus is not in Himself, and we are not in ourselves. The fact that Jesus is in us does not make us Jesus.

This is how the Lord in His wisdom overthrows the alleged intelligence of these serpents, who think they are in a position to challenge God. **The Lord confounds these sorcerers by the very same passages that they use as facts to support their folly.**

Let's read this passage: **John 14:20** "At that day you will know that **I am in My Father**, and **you in Me**, and **I in you**." If Jesus being in His Father is Himself the Father, it means that while being in us, Jesus is us. And if Jesus being in His Father is Himself His Father, it means that we in Jesus, are Jesus. Let's read these other passages:

**John 17:21** "That they all may be one, as You, Father, **are in Me**, and **I in You**; that they also may **be one in Us**, that the world may believe that You sent Me." **John 17:23** "**I in them**, and **You in Me**; that they may be made perfect in one, and that the world may know that You have sent Me, and have loved them as You have loved Me." Do you need further evidence of the total confusion of these sorcerers? For you who were still following them, repent and flee from these vipers!

## 2.52- Difference between Jesus Christ and lucifer

All the research studies that we have undertaken are sufficient to completely open your eyes on the lie in which you were. But we found it useful to insist on this other element that will further contribute to your complete deliverance from this false doctrine, once and for all. What you should understand is why the Son carries so much weight in the eyes of the Father, to be so loved by the Father, to be in charge of all that belong to the Father, to the point of even being mistaken for the Father, for those who do not understand. What justifies the predominant position that the Son has before God the Father, is not so much because He is the Son, but because of His total and perfect obedience to the Father. That is what the Father reveals to us in Hebrews 1 and Philipians 2.

**Hebrews 1:9** "**You have loved righteousness and hated wickedness; therefore God, your God, has set you above your companions by anointing you with the oil of joy.**" It is because Jesus has **loved righteousness and hated wickedness** that God the Father **has set Him above His companions by anointing Him with the oil of joy.**

**Philipians 2:5-11** "Your attitude should be the same as that of Christ Jesus: <sup>6</sup>Who, being in very nature God, **did not consider equality with God something to be grasped**, <sup>7</sup>but made himself nothing, taking the very nature of a servant, being made in human likeness. <sup>8</sup>And being found in appearance as a man, **he humbled himself and became obedient to death - even death on a cross!** <sup>9</sup>**Therefore God exalted him to the highest place and gave him the name that is above every name**, <sup>10</sup>that at the name of Jesus every knee should bow, in heaven and on earth and under the earth, <sup>11</sup>and every tongue confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father."

This means that if Jesus Christ had been a rebellious Son, He would never have had this position that He occupies before the Father. Do not forget that it is pride that earned lucifer the place he occupies today. In his pride he wanted to **consider equality with God something to be grasped**. You know what happened thereafter. God instead humiliated and belittled him. Whereas Jesus in His humility has chosen to give to the Father, the place of the one true God, and **did not consider equality with God something to be grasped**. And for

this, God exalted Him to the highest place and gave Him the name that is above every name. ***With this explanation, you understand more easily that the Son is not the Father at all. It is the total obedience of the Son to the Father that earned the Son the special place that He occupies in the sight of the Father.***

Second important thing you should understand. According to God the Father's own words, Jesus had companions. That is what we read in **Hebrews 1:9**: "... ***Therefore God, your God, has set you above your companions by anointing you with the oil of joy.***" It is still because of His total obedience and His perfect submission to God, and also of His love for ***righteousness, and His hatred for wickedness***, that the Father has set Him above His equals. For that reason, Jesus Christ the Son of God does no longer have equals. He is now above everything and everyone. The word of God is very clear on that. God has not made it a mystery, according to the farce of the sorcerers, who want to fight the truth by claiming to hold a mystery that no one else has ever held.

And if it is only through the Son that we must go to the Father, *"if there is no salvation in any other, for there is no other name under heaven given to men by which we must be saved"*, as the Bible tells us in Acts 4:12, it is again for the same reason. The Son has won the trust of the Father by His total obedience and His perfect submission to God, and became the only one who could save us, the only one through whom salvation is possible. Do not also forget that it is voluntarily that Jesus Christ has chosen to suffer and die for us. He was not forced to. The Bible tells us in **1Timothy 2:5-6** that Jesus gave **Himself** as a ransom for us. *"For there is one God and one mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus, <sup>6</sup>who gave himself as a ransom for all men ..."*

And if we can praise and worship the Son, without inciting the Father's jealousy, it is because the Son having opted for total obedience and perfect submission to the Father, the Father has put everything under Him, and has given all things into His hand. ***Praising and worshiping the Son amounts to praising and worshiping the Father, and serving the Son, amounts to serving the Father, but the Son is not the Father. God the Father will never be jealous to see us praising and worshiping His Son.*** It is in fact Him who wanted it so. He chose to honour the Son, because the Son has also honoured Him. 1Samuel 2:30 *"... Those who honour me I will honour, but those who despise me will be disdained."* Jesus chose to honour the Father, and He Himself was honoured by the Father, while lucifer chose to despise the Father, and he himself was despised by the Father.

***Jesus Christ is thus different from God the Father, just as lucifer the devil is different from God the Father.*** What justifies the fact that one is mistaken for the Father whilst the other has become the enemy of the Father is the position that each of them had chosen. While Jesus had chosen obedience and submission, lucifer had chosen pride and rivalry. He wanted to compete with God. Do not forget that like Jesus, lucifer also had a special place in the eyes of the Father and enjoyed the privileges related to it. He had unfortunately lost this position because of his pride. Know then that had it not been satans' pride,

rebellion, disobedience to God, his hatred of **righteousness, and his love of wickedness**, lucifer would still be in his position and enjoy the same privileges.

Therefore, lucifer too benefited from the title of God. But like Jesus, he had above him the only true God, that is, God the Father. While Jesus Christ God had chosen **not to consider equality with God something to be grasped, lucifer god did just the opposite**. He had **considered equality with God something to be grasped**. For this, God the Father had proven to him that in reality, **there are not many Gods**, and there will never be. God the Father had therefore stripped him of his title, and he became a mere demon that now trembles before Jesus who was once one of his companions.

For those who say that if Jesus were God different from God the Father, this would amount to saying that there are many Gods, they just have corrupt minds. In fact, it is not only Jesus Christ who benefited from the title of God. Lucifer also benefited from that title, as well as all those to whom the Father wanted to give that title. But all those who are Gods or who are gods, or who are considered as such, are so by the sole will of the only and one true God, God the Father. **Lucifer's agents must then understand that even their father the devil benefited from the title of God just like Jesus**. Yet there have never been many Gods. There has always been one true God, the God of all, and the Father of all.

Lucifer had lost his title and his glory when he fell from heaven, because of his pride, his rebellion, his disobedience, and his rivalry with God. Jesus Christ on His part has kept His title and His glory because of His total obedience, loyalty, and perfect submission to God. That is why He is our God, although He has His Father. I believe that this explanation will deliver you once and for all from the lies of the sons of the devil who have succeeded in confusing you by their incantations, to the point of making you believe in an abominable doctrine that has no meaning.

This is what the Bible says about satan: **Isaiah 14:10-15** *"They will all respond, they will say to you, "You also have become weak, as we are; you have become like us." <sup>11</sup>All your pomp has been brought down to the grave, along with the noise of your harps; maggots are spread out beneath you and worms cover you. <sup>12</sup>How you have fallen from heaven, O morning star, son of the dawn! You have been cast down to the earth, you who once laid low the nations! <sup>13</sup>You said in your heart, "I will ascend to heaven; I will raise my throne above the stars of God; I will sit enthroned on the mount of assembly, on the utmost heights of the sacred mountain. <sup>14</sup>I will ascend above the tops of the clouds; I will make myself like the Most High." <sup>15</sup>But you are brought down to the grave, to the depths of the pit."*

Beloved, I never permit myself to teach you what I think. I teach you what the Father of Jesus Christ, that some demons challenge, reveals to me. And my revelations are not mysteries that are written nowhere. All of my revelations are conformed to the Holy Bible, and all can be verified in the Holy Bible. I do not need to make a new bible in order to lie to people and justify the lie. I teach the

doctrine of Christ based on the Holy Bible. I teach the Sound Doctrine, that the Father of our Lord and Master Jesus Christ approves.

I do not peddle the word of God as the agents of Hell do. That is why I do not need to go through acrobatics to convince the true Children of God. The Father of Jesus Christ that the demons reject does that work for me. I did not need to sign pacts with lucifer to obtain my Apostle's ministry, I got it from Jesus Christ the only Son of the living God. And Jesus Christ my Master himself bears witness of me. It is not for me to commend myself to the Children of God, the Lord Jesus who sent me, takes care of it.

***All those who sign great pacts with lucifer to have a ministry, to be powerful, to bewitch people and make them fall, and to pretend to cast their demons colleagues away and so demonstrate the alleged power that they proclaim to have, must understand that satan will under no circumstances be able to compete with God. The first and only attempt had caused him to fall and be annihilated forever.***

This difference that I have just explained to you between Jesus Christ and lucifer, is the same that exists between us and the children of satan. Know very well that the difference that exists between us and the demons in the flesh, is the fact that while we choose to obey the Father, they prefer rebellion. While we submit completely and perfectly to God the Father through Jesus Christ our Lord and Redeemer, demons in the flesh choose disobedience, rivalry with God, and pride, as their father lucifer. That is why while we demonstrate by our teachings that the Bible is true, they deploy excessive zeal in creating doctrines demonstrating that the Bible is false, and that God is a liar.

Therefore, in reality we do the works of our Father Jesus Christ, while they do the works of their father the devil. We follow the way of our Father Jesus Christ, while they follow the path of their father the devil. Beloved, this is the key to the mystery that the Lord our God and Father has just given us. This teaching will set you free completely and for good.

### 2.53- Conclusion

Beloved, know that we did not need to make such a long teaching to confound these agents of Hell. There are several Bible verses, which alone are enough to put an end to this debate once and for all. I will quote one of these verses here. It is John 8:14-18, which says: *"<sup>14</sup>Jesus answered, "Even if I testify on my own behalf, my testimony is valid, for I know where I came from and where I am going. But you have no idea where I come from or where I am going. <sup>15</sup>You judge by human standards; I pass judgment on no one. <sup>16</sup>But if I do judge, my decisions are right, because **I am not alone. I stand with the Father, who sent me.** <sup>17</sup>In your own Law it is written that the testimony of two men is valid. <sup>18</sup>**I am one who testifies for myself; my other witness is the Father, who sent me.**"*

In these verses of John 8:14-18, the Lord confirms the Scriptures, saying that **the testimony of two men is true**. And He goes on to say that His testimony and that of His Father constitute **the testimony of two men**. Jesus Christ the



Son of God says here incontestably that His Father and He are two separate persons. Jesus Christ cannot try to cheat, by duplicating himself, to give the impression that he benefits from two testimonies, whereas he would benefit from only one. At this level alone, it is clearly established that ***Jesus Christ is not God the Father, and that Jesus Christ is different from God the Father. This demonstrates, for those who still doubted it, that Jesus Christ is not God the Father, and that He is different from God the Father. Jesus Christ is simply the Son of God, as He has always claimed.***

I am now totally free after putting at your disposal these teachings that will set you free once and for all from all the snares of the agents of Hell, and from all the traps that the sons of perdition had set for you. ***The blood of those who will still persist, despite this grace of God, will be upon their own heads.*** May all the glory be given to the Lord of hosts in the name of Jesus Christ the Son of the living God! Amen!

### 3- RESEARCH

#### 3.1- First Research: Jesus Speaks of His Father

##### 3.1.1- Introduction

The work given to us is to go through the Bible in search of all the passages in which Jesus spoke of the Father or of His Father, not forgetting the passages in which people accused Him of calling God His Father.

Before carrying out this research, we have all the same the right to ask ourselves the following questions: Why this study? What is the validity of this research? Of what use will the number of times Jesus spoke of the Father or of His Father be to us?

Beloved in the Lord, as you already know, when satan wants to cause confusion in the work of God, he never lacks people through whom he can accomplish his purpose. He has enough agents in the world; and his agents outnumber true Children of God in Churches. This justifies the proliferation of the false doctrine that we are experiencing today.

There are some demons who deceive many ignorant and unstable people by teaching them that Jesus Christ has no Father. According to these serpents, Jesus Christ would be God the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit. Many so-called Christians sadly believe in this blasphemy, although they have access to the Bible.

Rather than getting involved in vain discussions, and rather than going through great demonstrations to convince these lost Christians who allow themselves to be swallowed by this brood of vipers, we opted for the most simple solution, which is to let the Bible speak for Itself. We avoided any comment whatsoever, and we were careful not to carry out any analysis. We chose to limit ourselves only to the reading of the Bible. If then by searching through the Bible we notice that Jesus spoke of the Father or of His Father, these demons would prove to us what Father Jesus is talking about.

To make this study easy to exploit and to verify, we found it better to group the verses in which the words and/or expressions sought are found, first by chapter, and then by book. In so doing, we did subtotals by chapter, then totals by book, before working out the Final Total of the Bible. Moreover, we have **underlined and bolded** all the words and/or expressions sought in each verse. **The total of each book is given at the beginning and at the end of the said book.**

The books in which we found the words and/or expressions sought are: **Matthew, Mark, Luke, John, Acts of the Apostles and Revelation.**

##### 3.1.2- Book of Matthew: 44 times

###### Matthew 5 (3 times)

**Matthew 5:16** "In the same way, let your light shine before men, that they may see your good deeds and praise your **Father** in heaven."

**Matthew 5:45** "That you may be sons of your Father in heaven. He causes his sun to rise on the evil and the good, and sends rain on the righteous and the unrighteous."

**Matthew 5:48** "Be perfect, therefore, as your heavenly Father is perfect."

### **Matthew 6 (12 times)**

**Matthew 6:1** "Be careful not to do your 'acts of righteousness' before men, to be seen by them. If you do, you will have no reward from your Father in heaven."

**Matthew 6:4** "So that your giving may be in secret. Then your Father, who sees what is done in secret, will reward you."

**Matthew 6:6** "But when you pray, go into your room, close the door and pray to your Father, who is unseen. Then your Father, who sees what is done in secret, will reward you."

**Matthew 6:8** "Do not be like them, for your Father knows what you need before you ask him."

**Matthew 6:9** "This, then, is how you should pray: Our Father in heaven, hallowed be your name!"

**Matthew 6:14** "For if you forgive men when they sin against you, your heavenly Father will also forgive you."

**Matthew 6:15** "But if you do not forgive men their sins, your Father will not forgive your sins."

**Matthew 6:18** "So that it will not be obvious to men that you are fasting, but only to your Father, who is unseen; and your Father, who sees what is done in secret, will reward you."

**Matthew 6:26** "Look at the birds of the air; they do not sow or reap or store away in barns, and yet your heavenly Father feeds them. Are you not much more valuable than they?"

**Matthew 6:32** "For the pagans run after all these things, and your heavenly Father knows that you need them."

### **Matthew 7 (2 times)**

**Matthew 7:11** "If you, then, though you are evil, know how to give good gifts to your children, how much more will your Father in heaven give good gifts to those who ask him!"

**Matthew 7:21** "Not everyone who says to me, 'Lord, Lord,' will enter the kingdom of heaven, but only he who does the will of my Father who is in heaven."

**Matthew 10 (4 times)**

**Matthew 10:20** "For it will not be you speaking, but the Spirit of your **Father** speaking through you."

**Matthew 10:29** "Are not two sparrows sold for a penny? Yet not one of them will fall to the ground apart from the will of your **Father**."

**Matthew 10:32** "Whoever acknowledges me before men, I will also acknowledge him before my **Father** in heaven."

**Matthew 10:33** "But whoever disowns me before men, I will disown him before **my Father** in heaven."

**Matthew 11 (5 times)**

**Matthew 11:25** "At that time Jesus said, I praise you, **Father**, Lord of heaven and earth, because you have hidden these things from the wise and learned, and revealed them to little children."

**Matthew 11:26** "Yes, **Father**, for this was your good pleasure."

**Matthew 11:27** "All things have been committed to me by **my Father**. No one knows the Son except the **Father**, and no one knows the **Father** except the Son and those to whom the Son chooses to reveal him."

**Matthew 12 (1 time)**

**Matthew 12:50** "For whoever does the will of **my Father** in heaven is my brother and sister and mother."

**Matthew 13 (1 time)**

**Matthew 13:43** "Then the righteous will shine like the sun in the kingdom of their **Father**. He who has ears, let him hear."

**Matthew 15 (1 time)**

**Matthew 15:13** "He replied, every plant that **my heavenly Father** has not planted will be pulled up by the roots."

**Matthew 16 (2 times)**

**Matthew 16:17** "Jesus replied: Blessed are you, Simon son of Jonah, for this was not revealed to you by man, but by **my Father** in heaven."

**Matthew 16:27** "For the Son of Man is going to come in **his Father**'s glory with his angels, and then he will reward each person according to what he has done."

**Matthew 18 (4 times)**

**Matthew 18:10** "See that you do not look down on one of these little ones. For I tell you that their angels in heaven always see the face of **my Father** in heaven."

**Matthew 18:14** "In the same way your Father in heaven is not willing that any of these little ones should be lost."

**Matthew 18:19** "Again, I tell you that if two of you on earth agree about anything you ask for, it will be done for you by my Father in heaven."

**Matthew 18:35** "This is how my heavenly Father will treat each of you unless you forgive your brother from your heart."

#### **Matthew 20 (1 time)**

**Matthew 20:23** "Jesus said to them: You will indeed drink from my cup, but to sit at my right or left is not for me to grant. These places belong to those for whom they have been prepared by my Father."

#### **Matthew 23 (1 time)**

**Matthew 23:9** "And call no man your father upon the earth: for one is your Father, which is in heaven."

#### **Matthew 24 (1 time)**

**Matthew 24:36** "No one knows about that day or hour, not even the angels in heaven, nor the Son, but only the Father."

#### **Matthew 25 (1 time)**

**Matthew 25:34** "Then the King will say to those on his right: Come, you who are blessed by my Father; take your inheritance, the kingdom prepared for you since the creation of the world."

#### **Matthew 26 (4 times)**

**Matthew 26:29** "I tell you, I will not drink of this fruit of the vine from now on until that day when I drink it anew with you in my Father's kingdom."

**Matthew 26:39** "Going a little farther, he fell with his face to the ground and prayed, My Father, if it is possible, may this cup be taken from me. Yet not as I will, but as you will."

**Matthew 26:42** "He went away a second time and prayed, My Father, if it is not possible for this cup to be taken away unless I drink it, may your will be done."

**Matthew 26:53** "Do you think I cannot call on my Father, and he will at once put at my disposal more than twelve legions of angels?"

#### **Matthew 28 (1 time)**

**Matthew 28:19** "Therefore go and make disciples of all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit."

#### **Total in Matthew = 44 times**

In the book of Matthew, Jesus spoke directly of the Father or of His Father at least **44 times**.

**3.1.3- Book of Mark: 5 times****Mark 8 (1 time)**

**Mark 8:38** "If anyone is ashamed of me and my words in this adulterous and sinful generation, the Son of Man will be ashamed of him when he comes in his Father's glory with the holy angels."

**Mark 11 (2 times)**

**Mark 11:25** "And when you stand praying, if you hold anything against anyone, forgive him, so that your Father in heaven may forgive you your sins."

**Mark 11:26** "But if you do not forgive, neither will your Father in heaven forgive your trespasses."

**Mark 13 (1 time)**

**Mark 13:32** "No one knows about that day or hour, not even the angels in heaven, nor the Son, but only the Father."

**Mark 14 (1 time)**

**Mark 14:36** "Abba, Father," he said, "everything is possible for you. Take this cup from me. Yet not what I will, but what you will."

**Total in Mark = 5 times**

In the book of Mark, Jesus spoke directly of the Father or of His Father at least **5 times**.

**3.1.4- Book of Luke: 17 times****Luke 2 (1 time)**

**Luke 2:49** "Why were you searching for me?" he asked. "Didn't you know I had to be in my Father's house?"

**Luke 6 (1 time)**

**Luke 6:36** "Be merciful, just as your Father is merciful."

**Luke 9 (1 time)**

**Luke 9:26** "If anyone is ashamed of me and my words, the Son of Man will be ashamed of him when he comes in his glory and in the glory of the Father and of the holy angels."

**Luke 10 (5 times)**

**Luke 10:21** "At that time Jesus, full of joy through the Holy Spirit, said, I praise you, Father, Lord of heaven and earth, because you have hidden these things from the wise and learned, and revealed them to little children. Yes, Father, for this was your good pleasure."

**Luke 10:22** "All things have been committed to me by my Father. No one knows who the Son is except the Father, and no one knows who the Father is except the Son and those to whom the Son chooses to reveal him."

### **Luke 11 (2 times)**

**Luke 11:2** "He said to them, when you pray, say: Father, hallowed be your name, your kingdom come."

**Luke 11:13** "If you then, though you are evil, know how to give good gifts to your children, how much more will your Father in heaven give the Holy Spirit to those who ask him!"

### **Luke 12 (2 times)**

**Luke 12:30** "For the pagan world runs after all such things, and your Father knows that you need them."

**Luke 12:32** "Do not be afraid, little flock, for your Father has been pleased to give you the kingdom."

### **Luke 22 (2 times)**

**Luke 22:29** "And I confer on you a kingdom, just as my Father conferred one on me."

**Luke 22:42** "Father, if you are willing, take this cup from me; yet not my will, but yours be done."

### **Luke 23 (2 times)**

**Luke 23:34** "Jesus said, "Father, forgive them, for they do not know what they are doing." And they divided up his clothes by casting lots."

**Luke 23:46** "Jesus called out with a loud voice, "Father, into your hands I commit my spirit." When he had said this, he breathed his last."

### **Luke 24 (1 time)**

**Luke 24:49** "I am going to send you what my Father has promised; but stay in the city until you have been clothed with power from on high."

### **Total in Luke = 17 times**

In the book of Luke, Jesus spoke directly of the Father or of His Father at least **17 times**.

## **3.1.5- Book of John: 116 times**

### **John 2 (1 time)**

**John 2:16** "To those who sold doves he said: Get these out of here! How dare you turn my Father's house into a market!"

**John 4 (3 times)**

**John 4:21** "Jesus declared: Believe me, woman, a time is coming when you will worship the **Father** neither on this mountain nor in Jerusalem."

**John 4:23** "Yet a time is coming and has now come when the true worshipers will worship the **Father** in spirit and truth, for they are the kind of worshipers the **Father** seeks."

**John 5 (16 times)**

**John 5:17** "Jesus said to them: **My Father** is always at his work to this very day, and I, too, am working."

**John 5:18** "For this reason the Jews tried all the harder to kill him; not only was he breaking the Sabbath, but he was even calling **God his own Father**, making himself equal with God."

**John 5:19** "Jesus gave them this answer: I tell you the truth, the Son can do nothing by himself; he can do only what he sees **his Father** doing, because whatever the **Father** does the Son also does."

**John 5:20** "For the **Father** loves the Son and shows him all he does. Yes, to your amazement he will show him even greater things than these."

**John 5:21** "For just as the **Father** raises the dead and gives them life, even so the Son gives life to whom he is pleased to give it."

**John 5:22** "Moreover, the **Father** judges no one, but has entrusted all judgment to the Son."

**John 5:23** "That all may honour the Son just as they honour the **Father**. He who does not honour the Son does not honour the **Father**, who sent him."

**John 5:26** "For as the **Father** has life in himself, so he has granted the Son to have life in himself."

**John 5:30** "I can of Myself do nothing. As I hear, I judge; and My judgment is righteous, because I do not seek My own will but the will of the **Father** who sent Me."

**John 5:36** "I have testimony weightier than that of John. For the very work that the **Father** has given me to finish, and which I am doing, testifies that the **Father** has sent me."

**John 5:37** "And the **Father** who sent me has himself testified concerning me. You have never heard his voice nor seen his form."

**John 5:43** "I have come in **my Father**'s name, and you do not accept me; but if someone else comes in his own name, you will accept him."

**John 5:45** "But do not think I will accuse you before the **Father**. Your accuser is Moses, on whom your hopes are set."



**John 6 (12 times)**

**John 6:27** "Do not work for food that spoils, but for food that endures to eternal life, which the Son of Man will give you. On him God the **Father** has placed his seal of approval."

**John 6:32** "Jesus said to them, I tell you the truth, it is not Moses who has given you the bread from heaven, but it is **my Father** who gives you the true bread from heaven."

**John 6:37** "All that the **Father** gives me will come to me, and whoever comes to me I will never drive away."

**John 6:39** "This is the will of the **Father** who sent Me, that of all He has given Me I should lose nothing, but should raise it up at the last day."

**John 6:40** "For **my Father**'s will is that everyone who looks to the Son and believes in him shall have eternal life, and I will raise him up at the last day."

**John 6:44** "No one can come to me unless the **Father** who sent me draws him, and I will raise him up at the last day."

**John 6:45** "It is written in the Prophets: 'They will all be taught by God.' Everyone who listens to the **Father** and learns from him comes to me."

**John 6:46** "No one has seen the **Father** except the one who is from God; only he has seen the **Father**."

**John 6:57** "Just as the living **Father** sent me and I live because of the **Father**, so the one who feeds on me will live because of me."

**John 6:65** "He went on to say, this is why I told you that no one can come to me unless the **Father** has enabled him."

**John 8 (11 times)**

**John 8:16** "But if I do judge, my decisions are right, because I am not alone. I stand with the **Father**, who sent me."

**John 8:18** "I am one who testifies for myself; my other witness is the **Father**, who sent me."

**John 8:19** "Then they asked him, 'Where is **your Father**?' "You do not know me or **my Father**," Jesus replied. "If you knew me, you would know **my Father** also.""

**John 8:28** "So Jesus said: When you have lifted up the Son of Man, then you will know that I am the one I claim to be and that I do nothing on my own but speak just what the **Father** has taught me."

**John 8:29** "And He who sent Me is with Me. The **Father** has not left Me alone, for I always do those things that please Him."

**John 8:38** "I am telling you what I have seen in the **Father**'s presence, and you do what you have heard from your father."

**John 8:42** "Jesus said to them: If God were your **Father**, you would love me, for I came from God and now am here. I have not come on my own; but he sent me."

**John 8:49** "I am not possessed by a demon," said Jesus, "but I honour **my Father** and you dishonour me."

**John 8:54** "Jesus replied: If I glorify myself, my glory means nothing. **My Father**, whom you claim as your God, is the one who glorifies me."

### **John 10 (13 times)**

**John 10:15** "Just as the **Father** knows me and I know the **Father** - and I lay down my life for the sheep."

**John 10:17** "The reason **my Father** loves me is that I lay down my life - only to take it up again."

**John 10:18** "No one takes it from me, but I lay it down of my own accord. I have authority to lay it down and authority to take it up again. This command I received from **my Father**."

**John 10:25** "Jesus answered: I did tell you, but you do not believe. The miracles I do in **my Father**'s name speak for me."

**John 10:29** "**My Father**, who has given them to me, is greater than all; no one can snatch them out of **my Father**'s hand."

**John 10:30** "I and the **Father** are one."

**John 10:32** "But Jesus said to them: I have shown you many great miracles from the **Father**. For which of these do you stone me?"

**John 10:36** "What about the one whom the **Father** set apart as his very own and sent into the world? Why then do you accuse me of blasphemy because I said, 'I am God's Son'?"

**John 10:37** "Do not believe me unless I do what **my Father** does."

**John 10:38** "But if I do it, even though you do not believe me, believe the miracles, that you may know and understand that the **Father** is in me, and I in the **Father**."

### **John 11 (1 time)**

**John 11:41** "So they took away the stone. Then Jesus looked up and said, "**Father**, I thank you that you have heard me."

### **John 12 (5 times)**

**John 12:26** "Whoever serves me must follow me; and where I am, my servant also will be. **My Father** will honour the one who serves me."

**John 12:27** "Now my heart is troubled, and what shall I say? '**Father**, save me from this hour'? No, it was for this very reason I came to this hour."

**John 12:28** "**Father**, glorify your name!" Then a voice came from heaven, "I have glorified it, and will glorify it again."

**John 12:49** "For I did not speak of my own accord, but the **Father** who sent me commanded me what to say and how to say it."

**John 12:50** "I know that his command leads to eternal life. So whatever I say is just what the **Father** has told me to say."

### **John 14 (22 times)**

**John 14:2** "In **my Father**'s house are many rooms; if it were not so, I would have told you. I am going there to prepare a place for you."

**John 14:6** "Jesus answered: I am the way and the truth and the life. No one comes to the **Father** except through me."

**John 14:7** "If you really knew me, you would know **my Father** as well. From now on, you do know him and have seen him."

**John 14:9** "Jesus answered: Don't you know me, Philip, even after I have been among you such a long time? Anyone who has seen me has seen the **Father**. How can you say, 'Show us the **Father**'?"

**John 14:10** "Don't you believe that I am in the **Father**, and that the **Father** is in me? The words I say to you are not just my own. Rather, it is the **Father**, living in me, who is doing his work."

**John 14:11** "Believe me when I say that I am in the **Father** and the **Father** is in me; or at least believe on the evidence of the miracles themselves."

**John 14:12** "I tell you the truth, anyone who has faith in me will do what I have been doing. He will do even greater things than these, because I am going to the **Father**."

**John 14:13** "And I will do whatever you ask in my name, so that the Son may bring glory to the **Father**."

**John 14:16** "And I will ask the **Father**, and he will give you another Counsellor to be with you forever."

**John 14:20** "On that day you will realize that I am in **my Father**, and you are in me, and I am in you."

**John 14:21** "Whoever has my commands and obeys them, he is the one who loves me. He who loves me will be loved by **my Father**, and I too will love him and show myself to him."

**John 14:23** "Jesus replied, "If anyone loves me, he will obey my teaching. **My Father** will love him, and we will come to him and make our home with him."

**John 14:24** "He who does not love me will not obey my teaching. These words you hear are not my own; they belong to the **Father** who sent me."

**John 14:26** "But the Counsellor, the Holy Spirit, whom the **Father** will send in my name, will teach you all things and will remind you of everything I have said to you."

**John 14:28** "You heard me say, 'I am going away and I am coming back to you.' If you loved me, you would be glad that I am going to the **Father**, for the **Father** is greater than I."

**John 14:31** "But the world must learn that I love the **Father** and that I do exactly what **my Father** has commanded me. "Come now; let us leave."

### **John 15 (10 times)**

**John 15:1** "I am the true vine, and **my Father** is the gardener."

**John 15:8** "This is to **my Father**'s glory, that you bear much fruit, showing yourselves to be my disciples."

**John 15:9** "As the **Father** has loved me, so have I loved you. Now remain in my love."

**John 15:10** "If you obey my commands, you will remain in my love, just as I have obeyed **my Father**'s commands and remain in his love."

**John 15:15** "I no longer call you servants, because a servant does not know his master's business. Instead, I have called you friends, for everything that I learned from **my Father** I have made known to you."

**John 15:16** "You did not choose me, but I chose you and appointed you to go and bear fruit - fruit that will last. Then the **Father** will give you whatever you ask in my name."

**John 15:23** "He who hates me hates **my Father** as well."

**John 15:24** "If I had not done among them what no one else did, they would not be guilty of sin. But now they have seen these miracles, and yet they have hated both me and **my Father**."

**John 15:26** "When the Counsellor comes, whom I will send to you from the **Father**, the Spirit of truth who goes out from the **Father**, he will testify about me."

### **John 16 (11 times)**

**John 16:3** "They will do such things because they have not known the **Father** or me."

**John 16:10** "In regard to righteousness, because I am going to the **Father**, where you can see me no longer."

**John 16:15** "All that belongs to the **Father** is mine. That is why I said the Spirit will take from what is mine and make it known to you."

**John 16:16** "A little while, and you will not see Me; and again a little while, and you will see Me, because I go to the **Father**."

**John 16:23** "In that day you will no longer ask me anything. I tell you the truth, my Father will give you whatever you ask in my name."

**John 16:25** "Though I have been speaking figuratively, a time is coming when I will no longer use this kind of language but will tell you plainly about my Father."

**John 16:26** "In that day you will ask in my name. I am not saying that I will ask the Father on your behalf."

**John 16:27** "No, the Father himself loves you because you have loved me and have believed that I came from God."

**John 16:28** "I came from the Father and entered the world; now I am leaving the world and going back to the Father."

**John 16:32** "But a time is coming, and has come, when you will be scattered, each to his own home. You will leave me all alone. Yet I am not alone, for my Father is with me."

### **John 17 (6 times)**

**John 17:1** "After Jesus said this, he looked toward heaven and prayed: Father, the time has come. Glorify your Son, that your Son may glorify you."

**John 17:5** "And now, Father, glorify me in your presence with the glory I had with you before the world began."

**John 17:11** "I will remain in the world no longer, but they are still in the world, and I am coming to you. Holy Father, protect them by the power of your name - the name you gave me - so that they may be one as we are one."

**John 17:21** "That all of them may be one, Father, just as you are in me and I am in you. May they also be in us so that the world may believe that you have sent me."

**John 17:24** "Father, I want those you have given me to be with me where I am, and to see my glory, the glory you have given me because you loved me before the creation of the world."

**John 17:25** "Righteous Father, though the world does not know you, I know you, and they know that you have sent me."

### **John 18 (1 time)**

**John 18:11** "Jesus commanded Peter: Put your sword away! Shall I not drink the cup the Father has given me?"

### **John 20 (4 times)**

**John 20:17** "Jesus said: Do not hold on to me, for I have not yet returned to the Father. Go instead to my brothers and tell them, 'I am returning to my Father and your Father, to my God and your God.'"

**John 20:21** "Again Jesus said: Peace be with you! As the **Father** has sent me, I am sending you."

**Total in John = 116 times**

In the book of John, Jesus spoke directly of the Father or of His Father at least **116 times**.

### **3.1.6- Book of Acts of the Apostles: 1 time**

**Acts 1:7** "He said to them: It is not for you to know the times or dates the **Father** has set by his own authority."

**Total in Acts of the Apostles = 1 time**

In the book of Acts, Jesus spoke directly of the Father or of His Father at least **1 time**.

### **3.1.7- Book of Revelation: 3 times**

#### **Revelation 2 (1 time)**

**Revelation 2:27** "That one 'will rule them with an iron sceptre and will dash them to pieces like pottery' - just as I have received authority from **my Father**."

#### **Revelation 3 (2 times)**

**Revelation 3:5** "The one who is victorious will, like them, be dressed in white. I will never blot out the name of that person from the book of life, but will acknowledge that name before **my Father** and his angels."

**Revelation 3:21** "To the one who is victorious, I will give the right to sit with me on my throne, just as I was victorious and sat down with **my Father** on his throne."

**Total in Revelation = 3 times**

In the book of Revelation, Jesus spoke directly of the Father or of His Father at least **3 times**

**Conclusion:** Jesus spoke directly of the Father or of His Father at least **186 times** in the Bible.

### **3.1.8- Indirect statements**

In addition to the number of times Jesus spoke directly of the Father or of His Father, there are many other occasions when He spoke indirectly of the Father, that is occasions where he talked about His Father without naming Him. This is what we mean by indirect statements.

**Matthew 10:40** "He who receives you receives me, and he who receives me receives **the one who sent me**."

**Mark 9:37** "Whoever welcomes one of these little children in my name welcomes me; and whoever welcomes me does not welcome me but **the one who sent me**."

**Luke 9:48** "Then he said to them: Whoever welcomes this little child in my name welcomes me; and whoever welcomes me welcomes the one who sent me. For he who is least among you all - he is the greatest."

**Luke 10:16** "He who listens to you listens to me; he who rejects you rejects me; but he who rejects me rejects him who sent me."

**John 4:34** "My food," said Jesus, "is to do the will of him who sent me and to finish his work."

**John 5:24** "I tell you the truth, whoever hears my word and believes him who sent me has eternal life and will not be condemned; he has crossed over from death to life."

**John 5:30** "By myself I can do nothing; I judge only as I hear, and my judgment is just, for I seek not to please myself but him who sent me."

**John 6:38** "For I have come down from heaven not to do my will but to do the will of him who sent me."

**John 6:39** "And this is the will of him who sent me, that I shall lose none of all that he has given me, but raise them up at the last day."

**John 7:16** "Jesus answered: My teaching is not my own. It comes from him who sent me."

**John 7:18** "He who speaks on his own does so to gain honour for himself, but he who works for the honour of the one who sent him is a man of truth; there is nothing false about him."

**John 7:28** "Then Jesus, still teaching in the temple courts, cried out: Yes, you know me, and you know where I am from. I am not here on my own, but he who sent me is true. You do not know him."

**John 7:33** "Jesus said, "I am with you for only a short time, and then I go to the one who sent me."

**John 8:26** "I have much to say in judgment of you. But he who sent me is reliable, and what I have heard from him I tell the world."

**John 8:29** "The one who sent me is with me; he has not left me alone, for I always do what pleases him."

**John 9:4** "As long as it is day, we must do the work of him who sent me. Night is coming, when no one can work."

**John 12:44** "Then Jesus cried out, "When a man believes in me, he does not believe in me only, but in the one who sent me."

**John 12:45** "When he looks at me, he sees the one who sent me."

**John 13:20** "I tell you the truth, whoever accepts anyone I send accepts me; and whoever accepts me accepts the one who sent me."

**John 15:21** "They will treat you this way because of my name, for they do not know the One who sent me."

**John 16:5** "Now I am going to him who sent me, yet none of you asks me: Where are you going?"

**Total of indirect statements = 21 times**

Jesus spoke indirectly of the Father or of His Father at least **21 times** in the Bible.

**Grand Total in the Bible = 207 times**

### **3.1.9- Conclusion**

Jesus spoke directly and indirectly of the Father or of His Father at least **207 times** in the Bible, depending on what version of the Bible you have. As part of this work we have used both NIV and NKJV. We have also consulted a dozen of other English versions.



### 3.2- Second Research: Jesus Speaks of His God

#### 3.2.1- Introduction

The work given to us is to go through the Bible in search of all the passages in which Jesus spoke of God or of His God.

Before carrying out this research, we have all the same the right to ask ourselves the following questions: Why this study? What is the validity of this research? Of what use will the number of times Jesus spoke of God or of His God be to us?

Beloved in the Lord, as you already know, when satan wants to cause confusion in the work of God, he never lacks people through whom he can accomplish his purpose. He has enough agents in the world; and his agents outnumber true Children of God in Churches. This justifies the proliferation of the false doctrine that we are experiencing today.

There are some demons who deceive many ignorant and unstable people by teaching them that Jesus Christ has no God. According to these serpents, Jesus Christ would be God the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit. Many so-called Christians sadly believe in this blasphemy, although they have access to the Bible.

Rather than getting involved in vain discussions, and rather than going through great demonstrations to convince these lost Christians who allow themselves to be swallowed by this brood of vipers, we opted for the most simple solution, which is to let the Bible speaks for Itself. We avoided any comment whatsoever, and we were careful not to carry out any analysis. We chose to limit ourselves only to the reading of the Bible. If then by searching through the Bible we notice that Jesus spoke of God or of His God, these demons would prove to us what God Jesus is talking about.

To make this study easy to exploit and to verify, we found it better to group the verses in which the words and/or expressions sought are found, first by chapter, and then by book. In so doing, we did subtotals by chapter, then totals by book, before working out the Final Total of the Bible. Moreover, we have **underlined and bolded** all the words and/or expressions sought in each verse. **The total of each book is given at the beginning and at the end of the said book.**

The books in which we found the words and/or expressions sought are: **Matthew, Mark, Luke, John, and Revelation.**

#### 3.2.2- Book of Matthew: 29 times

##### Matthew 4 (3 times)

**Matthew 4:4** "Jesus answered, it is written: Man does not live on bread alone, but on every word that comes from the mouth of **God**."

**Matthew 4:7** "Jesus answered him: It is also written: 'Do not put the Lord your **God** to the test'."

**Matthew 4:10** "Jesus said to him, away from me, satan! For it is written: 'Worship the Lord your **God**, and serve him only'."

**Matthew 5 (3 times)**

**Matthew 5:8** "Blessed are the pure in heart, for they will see God."

**Matthew 5:9** "Blessed are the peacemakers, for they will be called sons of God."

**Matthew 5:34** "But I tell you, Do not swear at all: either by heaven, for it is God's throne."

**Matthew 6 (3 times)**

**Matthew 6:24** "No one can serve two masters. Either he will hate the one and love the other, or he will be devoted to the one and despise the other. You cannot serve both God and Money."

**Matthew 6:30** "If that is how God clothes the grass of the field, which is here today and tomorrow is thrown into the fire, will he not much more clothe you, O you of little faith?"

**Matthew 6:33** "But seek ye first the kingdom of God, and his righteousness; and all these things shall be added unto you."

**Matthew 12 (1 time)**

**Matthew 12:28** "But if I drive out demons by the Spirit of God, then the kingdom of God has come upon you."

**Matthew 15 (3 times)**

**Matthew 15:3** "Jesus replied, and why do you break the command of God for the sake of your tradition?"

**Matthew 15:4** "For God said, honour your father and mother' and 'anyone who curses his father or mother must be put to death.'"

**Matthew 15:6** "... Thus you nullify the word of God for the sake of your tradition."

**Matthew 16 (1 time)**

**Matthew 16:23** "Jesus turned and said to Peter: Get behind me, satan! You are a stumbling block to me; you do not have in mind the things of God, but the things of men."

**Matthew 19 (3 times)**

**Matthew 19:6** "So they are no longer two, but one. Therefore what God has joined together, let man not separate."

**Matthew 19:17** "So He said to him: Why do you call Me good? No one is good but One, that is, God. But if you want to enter into life, keep the commandments."

**Matthew 19:26** "Jesus looked at them and said: With man this is impossible, but with God all things are possible."

**Matthew 22 (8 times)**

**Matthew 22:21** "Caesar's, they replied. Then he said to them, give to Caesar what is Caesar's, and to God what is God's."

**Matthew 22:29** "Jesus replied: You are in error because you do not know the Scriptures or the power of God."

**Matthew 22:30** "For in the resurrection they neither marry nor are given in marriage, but are like angels of God in heaven."

**Matthew 22:31** "But concerning the resurrection of the dead, have you not read what was spoken to you by God, saying:"

**Matthew 22:32** "... God is not the God of the dead, but of the living."

**Matthew 22:37** "Jesus said to him: You shall love the Lord your God with all your heart, with all your soul, and with all your mind."

**Matthew 23 (1 time)**

**Matthew 23:22** "And he who swears by heaven swears by God's throne and by the one who sits on it."

**Matthew 26 (1 time)**

**Matthew 26:64** "Yes, it is as you say, Jesus replied. "But I say to all of you: In the future you will see the Son of Man sitting at the right hand of the Mighty One and coming on the clouds of heaven."

**Matthew 27 (2 times)**

**Matthew 27:46** "About the ninth hour Jesus cried out in a loud voice, 'Eloi, Eloi, lama sabachthani?' - which means, 'My God, my God, why have you forsaken me?'"

**Total in Matthew = 29 times**

In the book of Matthew, Jesus spoke directly of God or of His God at least **29 times**.

**3.2.3- Book of Mark: 21 times****Mark 3 (1 time)**

**Mark 3:35** "Whoever does God's will is my brother and sister and mother."

**Mark 7 (3 times)**

**Mark 7:8** "You have let go of the commands of God and are holding on to the traditions of men."

**Mark 7:9** "And he said to them: You have a fine way of setting aside the commands of God in order to observe your own traditions!"

**Mark 7:13** "Thus you nullify the word of God by your tradition that you have handed down. And you do many things like that."

**Mark 8 (1 time)**

**Mark 8:33** "But when Jesus turned and looked at his disciples, he rebuked Peter. Get behind me, satan! He said. 'You do not have in mind the things of God, but the things of men'."

**Mark 10 (3 times)**

**Mark 10:18** "Why do you call me good? Jesus answered. No one is good - except God alone."

**Mark 10:27** "Jesus looked at them and said: With man this is impossible, but not with God; all things are possible with God."

**Mark 11 (1 time)**

**Mark 11:22** "Have faith in God, Jesus answered."

**Mark 12 (8 times)**

**Mark 12:17** "Then Jesus said to them: 'Give to Caesar what is Caesar's and to God what is God's.' And they were amazed at him."

**Mark 12:24** "Jesus replied: Are you not in error because you do not know the Scriptures or the power of God?"

**Mark 12:26** "Now about the dead rising - have you not read in the book of Moses, in the account of the bush, how God said to him, 'I am the God of Abraham, the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob'?"

**Mark 12:27** "He is not the God of the dead, but the God of the living. You are therefore greatly mistaken."

**Mark 12:29** "The most important one," answered Jesus, "is this: 'Hear, O Israel, the Lord our God, the Lord is one.'"

**Mark 12:30** "Love the Lord your God with all your heart and with all your soul and with all your mind and with all your strength."

**Mark 13 (1 time)**

**Mark 13:19** "Because those will be days of distress unequalled from the beginning, when God created the world, until now - and never to be equalled again."

**Mark 14 (1 time)**

**Mark 14:62** "I am, said Jesus. And you will see the Son of Man sitting at the right hand of the Mighty One and coming on the clouds of heaven."

**Mark 15 (2 times)**

**Mark 15:34** "And at the ninth hour Jesus cried out in a loud voice, 'Eloi, Eloi, lama sabachthani?'- which means, 'My God, my God, why have you forsaken me?'"

**Total in Mark = 21 times**

In the book of Mark, Jesus spoke directly of God or of His God at least **21 times**.

**3.2.4- Book of Luke: 31 times****Luke 4 (2 times)**

**Luke 4:8** "Jesus answered, it is written: 'Worship the Lord your God and serve him only.'"

**Luke 4:12** "Jesus answered, it says: 'Do not put the Lord your God to the test'."

**Luke 7 (2 times)**

**Luke 7:29** "All the people, even the tax collectors, when they heard Jesus' words, acknowledged that God's way was right, because they had been baptized by John."

**Luke 7:30** "But the Pharisees and experts in the law rejected God's purpose for themselves, because they had not been baptized by John."

**Luke 8 (2 times)**

**Luke 8:11** "This is the meaning of the parable: The seed is the word of God."

**Luke 8:21** "He replied: My mother and brothers are those who hear God's word and put it into practice."

**Luke 11 (5 times)**

**Luke 11:20** "But if I drive out demons by the finger of God, then the kingdom of God has come to you."

**Luke 11:28** "He replied: Blessed rather are those who hear the word of God and obey it."

**Luke 11:42** "Woe to you Pharisees, because you give God a tenth of your mint, rue and all other kinds of garden herbs, but you neglect justice and the love of God. You should have practiced the latter without leaving the former undone."

**Luke 11:49** "Therefore the wisdom of God also said: I will send them prophets and apostles, and some of them they will kill and persecute."

**Luke 12 (7 times)**

**Luke 12:6** "Are not five sparrows sold for two copper coins? And not one of them is forgotten before God."

**Luke 12:8** "Also I say to you, whoever confesses Me before men, him the Son of Man also will confess before the angels of God."

**Luke 12:9** "But he who denies Me before men will be denied before the angels of God."

**Luke 12:20** "But God said to him, 'You fool! This very night your life will be demanded from you. Then who will get what you have prepared for yourself?'"

**Luke 12:21** "This is how it will be with anyone who stores up things for himself but is not rich toward God."

**Luke 12:24** "Consider the ravens: They do not sow or reap, they have no storeroom or barn; yet God feeds them. And how much more valuable you are than birds!"

**Luke 12:28** "If that is how God clothes the grass of the field, which is here today, and tomorrow is thrown into the fire, how much more will he clothe you, O you of little faith!"

### **Luke 15 (1 time)**

**Luke 15:10** "In the same way, I tell you, there is rejoicing in the presence of the angels of God over one sinner who repents."

### **Luke 16 (3 times)**

**Luke 16:13** "No servant can serve two masters. Either he will hate the one and love the other, or he will be devoted to the one and despise the other. You cannot serve both God and Money."

**Luke 16:15** "He said to them: You are the ones who justify yourselves in the eyes of men, but God knows your hearts. What is highly valued among men is detestable in God's sight."

### **Luke 18 (4 times)**

**Luke 18:2** "He said: In a certain town there was a judge who neither feared God nor cared about men."

**Luke 18:7** "And will not God bring about justice for his chosen ones, who cry out to him day and night? Will he keep putting them off?"

**Luke 18:19** "Why do you call me good?" Jesus answered. "No one is good - except God alone."

**Luke 18:27** "Jesus replied: What is impossible with men is possible with God."

### **Luke 20 (4 times)**

**Luke 20:25** "Caesar's, they replied. He said to them, then give to Caesar what is Caesar's, and to God what is God's."

**Luke 20:36** "And they can no longer die; for they are like the angels. They are God's children, since they are children of the resurrection."

**Luke 20:38** "He is not the God of the dead, but of the living, for to him all are alive."

### **Luke 22 (1 time)**

**Luke 22:69** "But from now on, the Son of Man will be seated at the right hand of the mighty God."

### **Total in Luke = 31 times**

In the book of Luke, Jesus spoke directly of God or of His God at least **31 times**.

### 3.2.5- Book of John: 39 times

#### John 1 (1 time)

**John 1:51** "He then added: I tell you the truth, you shall see heaven open, and the angels of God ascending and descending on the Son of Man."

#### John 3 (4 times)

**John 3:16** "For God so loved the world that he gave his one and only Son, that whoever believes in him shall not perish but have eternal life."

**John 3:17** "For God did not send his Son into the world to condemn the world, but to save the world through him."

**John 3:18** "Whoever believes in him is not condemned, but whoever does not believe stands condemned already because he has not believed in the name of God's one and only Son."

**John 3:21** "But whoever lives by the truth comes into the light, so that it may be seen plainly that what he has done has been done through God."

#### John 4 (2 times)

**John 4:10** "Jesus answered her: If you knew the gift of God and who it is that asks you for a drink, you would have asked him and he would have given you living water."

**John 4:24** "God is spirit, and his worshipers must worship in spirit and in truth."

#### John 5 (3 times)

**John 5:25** "I tell you the truth, a time is coming and has now come when the dead will hear the voice of the Son of God and those who hear will live."

**John 5:42** "But I know you. I know that you do not have the love of God in your hearts."

**John 5:44** "How can you believe if you accept praise from one another, yet make no effort to obtain the praise that comes from the only God?"

#### John 6 (5 times)

**John 6:27** "Do not work for food that spoils, but for food that endures to eternal life, which the Son of Man will give you. On him God the Father has placed his seal of approval."

**John 6:29** "Jesus answered: The work of God is this: to believe in the one he has sent."

**John 6:33** "For the bread of God is he who comes down from heaven and gives life to the world."

**John 6:45** "It is written in the Prophets: 'They will all be taught by God.' Everyone who listens to the Father and learns from him comes to me."

**John 6:46** "No one has seen the Father except the one who is from God; only he has seen the Father."

### **John 7 (1 time)**

**John 7:17** "If anyone chooses to do God's will, he will find out whether my teaching comes from God or whether I speak on my own."

### **John 8 (7 times)**

**John 8:40** "As it is, you are determined to kill me, a man who has told you the truth that I heard from God. Abraham did not do such things."

**John 8:42** "Jesus said to them: If God were your Father, you would love me, for I came from God and now am here. I have not come on my own; but he sent me."

**John 8:47** "He who belongs to God hears what God says. The reason you do not hear is that you do not belong to God."

**John 8:54** "Jesus replied: If I glorify myself, my glory means nothing. My Father, whom you claim as your God, is the one who glorifies me."

### **John 9 (2 times)**

**John 9:3** "Neither this man nor his parents sinned," said Jesus, "but this happened so that the work of God might be displayed in his life."

**John 9:35** "Jesus heard that they had cast him out; and when He had found him, He said to him, 'Do you believe in the Son of God'?"

### **John 10 (2 times)**

**John 10:35** "If he called them 'gods,' to whom the word of God came - and the Scripture cannot be broken..."

**John 10:36** "What about the one whom the Father set apart as his very own and sent into the world? Why then do you accuse me of blasphemy because I said, 'I am God's Son'?"

### **John 11 (3 times)**

**John 11:4** "When he heard this, Jesus said: This sickness will not end in death. No, it is for God's glory so that God's Son may be glorified through it."

**John 11:40** "Then Jesus said: Did I not tell you that if you believed, you would see the glory of God?"

### **John 13 (3 times)**

**John 13:31** "When he was gone, Jesus said: Now is the Son of Man glorified and God is glorified in him."

**John 13:32** "If God is glorified in him, God will glorify the Son in himself, and will glorify him at once."



**John 14 (1 time)**

**John 14:1** "Do not let your hearts be troubled. Trust in God; trust also in me."

**John 16 (2 times)**

**John 16:2** "They will put you out of the synagogue; in fact, a time is coming when anyone who kills you will think he is offering a service to God."

**John 16:27** "No, the Father himself loves you because you have loved me and have believed that I came from God."

**John 17 (1 time)**

**John 17:3** "Now this is eternal life: that they may know you, the only true God, and Jesus Christ, whom you have sent."

**John 20 (2 times)**

**John 20:17** "Jesus said: Do not hold on to me, for I have not yet returned to the Father. Go instead to my brothers and tell them, 'I am returning to my Father and your Father, to my God and your God.'"

**Total in John = 39 times**

In the book of John, Jesus spoke directly of God or of His God at least **39 times**.

**3.2.6- Book of Revelation: 11 times****Revelation 2 (2 times)**

**Revelation 2:7** "Whoever has ears, let them hear what the Spirit says to the churches. To the one who is victorious, I will give the right to eat from the tree of life, which is in the paradise of God."

**Revelation 2:18** "To the angel of the church in Thyatira write: These are the words of the Son of God, whose eyes are like blazing fire and whose feet are like burnished bronze."

**Revelation 3 (7 times)**

**Revelation 3:1** "To the angel of the church in Sardis write: These are the words of him who holds the seven spirits of God and the seven stars. I know your deeds; you have a reputation of being alive, but you are dead."

**Revelation 3:2** "Wake up! Strengthen what remains and is about to die, for I have found your deeds unfinished in the sight of my God."

**Revelation 3:12** "The one who is victorious I will make a pillar in the temple of my God. Never again will they leave it. I will write on them the name of my God and the name of the city of my God, the new Jerusalem, which is coming down out of heaven from my God; and I will also write on them my new name."

**Revelation 3:14** "To the angel of the church in Laodicea write: These are the words of the Amen, the faithful and true witness, the ruler of God's creation."

### Revelation 22 (2 times)

**Revelation 22:18** "I warn everyone who hears the words of the prophecy of this scroll: If anyone adds anything to them, **God** will add to that person the plagues described in this scroll."

**Revelation 22:19** "And if anyone takes words away from this scroll of prophecy, **God** will take away from that person any share in the tree of life and in the Holy City, which are described in this scroll."

### Total in Revelation = 11 times

In the book of Revelation, Jesus spoke directly of God or of His God at least **11 times**

### 3.2.7- Conclusion

Jesus spoke directly of God or of His God at least **131 times** in the Bible, depending on what version of the Bible you have. As part of this work we have used both NIV and NKJV. We have also consulted a dozen of other English versions.

### 3.3- Third Research: The Disciples Speak of God the Father

#### 3.3.1- Introduction

The work given to us is to go through the Bible in search of all the passages in which the Apostles and the other disciples of Jesus Christ spoke of the Father or of God the Father different from Jesus Christ the Son of God.

Before carrying out this research, we have all the same the right to ask ourselves the following questions: Why this study? What is the validity of this research? Of what use will the number of times the Apostles and the other Disciples spoke of the Father or of God the Father be to us?

Beloved in the Lord, as you already know, when satan wants to cause confusion in the work of God, he never lacks people through whom he can accomplish his purpose. He has enough agents in the world; and his agents outnumber true Children of God in Churches. This justifies this proliferation of the false doctrine that we are experiencing today.

There are some demons that deceive many ignorant and unstable people, by teaching them that Jesus Christ neither has a Father nor God. According to these serpents, Jesus Christ would be God the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit. Many so-called Christians sadly believe in this blasphemy, although they have access to the Bible.

Rather than getting involved in vain discussions, and rather than going through great demonstrations to convince these lost Christians who allow themselves to be swallowed by this brood of vipers who came directly from the pit of Hell, we opted for the most simple solution, which is to let the Bible speaks for Itself. We avoided any comment whatsoever, and we were careful not to carry out any analysis. We chose to limit ourselves only to the reading of the Bible. If then by searching through the Bible we notice that, in addition to Jesus, the Apostles and the other Disciples spoke of God the Father as the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ and also ours, these demons would prove to us what God the Father it's all about.

To make this study easy to exploit and to verify, we found it better to group the verses in which the words and/or expressions sought are found, first by chapter, and then by book. In so doing, we did subtotals by chapter, then totals by book, before working out the Final Total of the Bible. Moreover, we have **underlined and bolded** all the words and/or expressions sought in each verse. **The total of each book is given at the beginning and at the end of the said book.**

The books in which we found the words and/or expressions sought are: **Matthew, Mark, Luke, John, Acts, Romans, 1Corinthians, 2Corinthians, Galatians, Ephesians, Philippians, Colossians, 1Thessalonians, 2Thessalonians, 1Timothy, 2Timothy, Titus, Philemon, Hebrews, James, 1Peter, 2Peter, 1John, 2John, Jude, and Revelation.**

### 3.3.2- Book of Matthew: 3 times

#### Matthew 14 (1time)

**Matthew 14:33** "Then those who were in the boat worshiped him, saying, truly you are the Son of God."

#### Matthew 16 (1 time)

**Matthew 16:16** "Simon Peter answered: You are the Christ, the Son of the living God."

#### Matthew 27 (1 time)

**Matthew 27:54** "When the centurion and those with him who were guarding Jesus saw the earthquake and all that had happened, they were terrified, and exclaimed, 'Surely he was the Son of God'!"

#### Total in Matthew = 3 times

In the book of Matthew, the Disciples spoke of the Father or of God the Father at least **3 times**.

### 3.3.3- Book of Mark: 3 times

#### Marc 1 (1 time)

**Marc 1:1** "The beginning of the gospel about Jesus Christ, the Son of God."

#### Mark 15 (1 time)

**Mark 15:39** "And when the centurion, who stood there in front of Jesus, heard his cry and saw how he died, he said, 'Surely this man was the Son of God'!"

#### Mark 16 (1 time)

**Mark 16:19** "After the Lord Jesus had spoken to them, he was taken up into heaven and he sat at the right hand of God."

#### Total in Mark = 3 times

In the book of Mark, the Disciples spoke of the Father or of God the Father at least **3 times**.

### 3.3.4- Book of Luke: 14 times

#### Luke 2 (7 times)

**Luke 2:26** "It had been revealed to him by the Holy Spirit that he would not die before he had seen the Lord's Christ."

**Luke 2:28** "Simeon took him in his arms and praised God, saying:"

**Luke 2:29** "Sovereign Lord, as you have promised, you now dismiss your servant in peace."

**Luke 2:37** "And this woman was a widow of about eighty-four years, who did not depart from the temple, but served God with fastings and prayers night and day."

**Luke 2:38** "Coming up to them at that very moment, she gave thanks to God and spoke about the child to all who were looking forward to the redemption of Jerusalem."

**Luke 2:40** "And the child grew and became strong; he was filled with wisdom, and the grace of God was upon him."

**Luke 2:52** "And Jesus grew in wisdom and stature, and in favour with God and men."

### **Luke 3 (1 time)**

**Luke 3:38** "The son of Enosh, the son of Seth, the son of Adam, the son of God."

### **Luke 6 (1 time)**

**Luke 6:12** "One of those days Jesus went out to a mountainside to pray, and spent the night praying to God."

### **Luke 7 (2 times)**

**Luke 7:16** "They were all filled with awe and praised God. "A great prophet has appeared among us," they said. God has come to help his people."

### **Luke 9 (1 time)**

**Luke 9:20** "But what about you?" he asked. "Who do you say I am?" Peter answered, 'The Christ of God'."

### **Luke 19 (1 time)**

**Luke 19:38** "Blessed is the king who comes in the name of the Lord!" "Peace in heaven and glory in the highest!"

### **Luke 24 (1 time)**

**Luke 24:19** "What things?" he asked. "About Jesus of Nazareth," they replied. "He was a prophet, powerful in word and deed before God and all the people."

### **Total in Luke = 14 times**

In the book of Luke, the Disciples spoke of the Father or of God the Father at least **14 times**.

## **3.3.5- Book of John: 34 times**

### **John 1 (9 times)**

**John 1:1** "In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God."

**John 1:2** "He was with God in the beginning."

**John 1:14** "The Word became flesh and made his dwelling among us. We have seen his glory, the glory of the One and Only, who came from the Father, full of grace and truth."

**John 1:18** "No one has ever seen God, but God the One and Only, who is at the Father's side, has made him known."

**John 1:29** "The next day John saw Jesus coming toward him and said, 'Look, the Lamb of God, who takes away the sin of the world!'"

**John 1:34** "I have seen and I testify that this is the Son of God."

**John 1:36** "When he saw Jesus passing by, he said, 'Look, the Lamb of God!'"

**John 1:49** "Then Nathanael declared: Rabbi, you are the Son of God; you are the King of Israel."

### **John 3 (8 times)**

**John 3:2** "He came to Jesus at night and said: Rabbi, we know you are a teacher who has come from God. For no one could perform the miraculous signs you are doing if God were not with him."

**John 3:33** "The man who has accepted it has certified that God is truthful."

**John 3:34** "For the one whom God has sent speaks the words of God, for God gives the Spirit without limit."

**John 3:35** "The Father loves the Son and has placed everything in his hands."

**John 3:36** "Whoever believes in the Son has eternal life, but whoever rejects the Son will not see life, for God's wrath remains on him."

### **John 5 (2 times)**

**John 5:18** "For this reason the Jews tried all the harder to kill him; not only was he breaking the Sabbath, but he was even calling God his own Father, making himself equal with God."

### **John 6 (1 time)**

**John 6:69** "Also we have come to believe and know that You are the Christ, the Son of the living God."

### **John 8 (1 time)**

**John 8:27** "They did not understand that he was telling them about his Father."

### **John 9 (2 times)**

**John 9:31** "We know that God does not listen to sinners. He listens to the godly man who does his will."

**John 9:33** "If this man were not from God, he could do nothing."

**John 11 (3 times)**

**John 11:22** "But even now I know that whatever You ask of God, God will give You."

**John 11:27** "Yes, Lord, she told him, I believe that you are the Christ, the Son of God, who was to come into the world."

**John 13 (4 times)**

**John 13:1** "It was just before the Passover Feast. Jesus knew that the time had come for him to leave this world and go to the Father. Having loved his own who were in the world, he now showed them the full extent of his love."

**John 13:3** "Jesus knew that the Father had put all things under his power, and that he had come from God and was returning to God."

**John 14 (1 time)**

**John 14:8** "Philip said: Lord, show us the Father and that will be enough for us."

**John 16 (2 times)**

**John 16:17** "Some of his disciples said to one another, what does he mean by saying, 'In a little while you will see me no more, and then after a little while you will see me,' and 'Because I am going to the Father'?"

**John 16:30** "Now we can see that you know all things and that you do not even need to have anyone ask you questions. This makes us believe that you came from God."

**John 20 (1 time)**

**John 20:31** "But these are written that you may believe that Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God, and that by believing you may have life in his name."

**Total in John = 34 times**

In the book of John, the Disciples spoke of the Father or of God the Father at least **34 times**.

**3.3.6- Book of Acts of the Apostles: 47 times****Acts 1 (1 time)**

**Acts 1:4** "On one occasion, while he was eating with them, he gave them this command: Do not leave Jerusalem, but wait for the gift my Father promised, which you have heard me speak about."

**Acts 2 (9 times)**

**Acts 2:22** "Men of Israel, listen to this: Jesus of Nazareth was a man accredited by God to you by miracles, wonders and signs, which God did among you through him, as you yourselves know."

**Acts 2:23** "This man was handed over to you by God's set purpose and foreknowledge; and you, with the help of wicked men, put him to death by nailing him to the cross."

**Acts 2:24** "But God raised him from the dead, freeing him from the agony of death, because it was impossible for death to keep its hold on him."

**Acts 2:30** "But he was a prophet and knew that God had promised him on oath that he would place one of his descendants on his throne."

**Acts 2:32** "God has raised this Jesus to life, and we are all witnesses of the fact."

**Acts 2:33** "Exalted to the right hand of God, he has received from the Father the promised Holy Spirit and has poured out what you now see and hear."

**Acts 2:36** "Therefore let all Israel be assured of this: God has made this Jesus, whom you crucified, both Lord and Christ."

### Acts 3 (8 times)

**Acts 3:13** "The God of Abraham, Isaac and Jacob, the God of our fathers, has glorified his servant Jesus. You handed him over to be killed, and you disowned him before Pilate, though he had decided to let him go."

**Acts 3:15** "You killed the author of life, but God raised him from the dead. We are witnesses of this."

**Acts 3:18** "But this is how God fulfilled what he had foretold through all the prophets, saying that his Christ would suffer."

**Acts 3:21** "He must remain in heaven until the time comes for God to restore everything, as he promised long ago through his holy prophets."

**Acts 3:22** "For Moses said: The Lord your God will raise up for you a prophet like me from among your own people; you must listen to everything he tells you."

**Acts 3:25** "And you are heirs of the prophets and of the covenant God made with your fathers. He said to Abraham, 'Through your offspring all peoples on earth will be blessed'."

**Acts 3:26** "When God raised up his servant, he sent him first to you to bless you by turning each of you from your wicked ways."

### Acts 4 (6 times)

**Acts 4:10** "Then know this, you and all the people of Israel: It is by the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth, whom you crucified but whom God raised from the dead, that this man stands before you healed."

**Acts 4:24** "So when they heard that, they raised their voice to God with one accord and said: Lord, You are God, who made heaven and earth and the sea, and all that is in them."



**Acts 4:26** "The kings of the earth take their stand and the rulers gather together against **the Lord** and against his Anointed One."

**Acts 4:29** "Now, **Lord**, consider their threats and enable your servants to speak your word with great boldness."

### **Acts 5 (3 times)**

**Acts 5:30** "The **God** of our fathers raised Jesus from the dead - whom you had killed by hanging him on a tree."

**Acts 5:31** "**God** exalted him to his own right hand as Prince and Saviour that he might give repentance and forgiveness of sins to Israel."

**Acts 5:32** "We are witnesses of these things, and so is the Holy Spirit, whom **God** has given to those who obey him."

### **Acts 7 (4 times)**

**Acts 7:48** "However, the **Most High** does not live in houses made by men. As the prophet says:"

**Acts 7:55** "But Stephen, full of the Holy Spirit, looked up to heaven and saw the glory of **God**, and Jesus standing at the right hand of **God**."

**Acts 7:56** "Look, he said, I see heaven open and the Son of Man standing at the right hand of **God**."

### **Acts 8 (1 time)**

**Acts 8:37** "Then Philip said, "If you believe with all your heart, you may." And he answered and said, "I believe that Jesus Christ is the Son of **God**."

### **Acts 9 (1 time)**

**Acts 9:20** "At once he began to preach in the synagogues that Jesus is the Son of **God**."

### **Acts 10 (3 times)**

**Acts 10:40** "But **God** raised him from the dead on the third day and caused him to be seen."

**Acts 10:41** "He was not seen by all the people, but by witnesses whom **God** had already chosen - by us who ate and drank with him after he rose from the dead."

**Acts 10:42** "He commanded us to preach to the people and to testify that he is the one whom **God** appointed as judge of the living and the dead."

### **Acts 11 (3 times)**

**Acts 11:17** "So if **God** gave them the same gift as he gave us, who believed in the Lord Jesus Christ, who was I to think that I could oppose **God**?"

**Acts 11:23** "When he arrived and saw the evidence of the grace of **God**, he was glad and encouraged them all to remain true to the Lord with all their hearts."

**Acts 13 (4 times)**

**Acts 13:23** "From this man's descendants God has brought to Israel the Saviour Jesus, as he promised."

**Acts 13:30** "But God raised him from the dead."

**Acts 13:33** "God has fulfilled this for us their children, in that He has raised up Jesus. As it is also written in the second Psalm: You are My Son, today I have begotten You."

**Acts 13:37** "But the one whom God raised from the dead did not see decay."

**Acts 17 (1 time)**

**Acts 17:30** "In the past God overlooked such ignorance, but now he commands all people everywhere to repent."

**Acts 20 (1 time)**

**Acts 20:21** "I have declared to both Jews and Greeks that they must turn to God in repentance and have faith in our Lord Jesus."

**Acts 22 (1 time)**

**Acts 22:14** "Then he said: The God of our fathers has chosen you to know his will and to see the Righteous One and to hear words from his mouth."

**Acts 26 (1 time)**

**Acts 26:8** "Why should any of you consider it incredible that God raises the dead?"

**Total in Acts of the Apostles = 47 times**

In the book of Acts, the Disciples spoke of the Father or of God the Father at least **47 times**.

**3.3.7- Book of Romans: 44 times****Romans 1 (6 times)**

**Romans 1:4** "And who through the Spirit of holiness was declared with power to be the Son of God by his resurrection from the dead: Jesus Christ our Lord."

**Romans 1:7** "To all in Rome who are loved by God and called to be saints: Grace and peace to you from God our Father and from the Lord Jesus Christ."

**Romans 1:8** "First, I thank my God through Jesus Christ for all of you, because your faith is being reported all over the world."

**Romans 1:9** "God, whom I serve with my whole heart in preaching the gospel of his Son, is my witness how constantly I remember you."

**Romans 1:17** "For in the gospel a righteousness from God is revealed, a righteousness that is by faith from first to last, just as it is written: The righteous will live by faith."

**Romans 2 (1 time)**

**Romans 2:16** "This will take place on the day when God will judge men's secrets through Jesus Christ, as my gospel declares."

**Romans 3 (2 times)**

**Romans 3:22** "This righteousness from God comes through faith in Jesus Christ to all who believe..."

**Romans 3:25** "God presented him as a sacrifice of atonement, through faith in his blood. He did this to demonstrate his justice, because in his forbearance he had left the sins committed beforehand unpunished."

**Romans 5 (5 times)**

**Romans 5:1** "Therefore, since we have been justified through faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ."

**Romans 5:8** "But God demonstrates his own love for us in this: While we were still sinners, Christ died for us."

**Romans 5:10** "For if, when we were God's enemies, we were reconciled to him through the death of his Son, how much more, having been reconciled, shall we be saved through his life!"

**Romans 5:11** "Not only is this so, but we also rejoice in God through our Lord Jesus Christ, through whom we have now received reconciliation."

**Romans 5:15** "But the gift is not like the trespass. For if the many died by the trespass of the one man, how much more did God's grace and the gift that came by the grace of the one man, Jesus Christ, overflow to the many!"

**Romans 6 (4 times)**

**Romans 6:4** "We were therefore buried with him through baptism into death in order that, just as Christ was raised from the dead through the glory of the Father, we too may live a new life."

**Romans 6:10** "The death he died, he died to sin once for all; but the life he lives, he lives to God."

**Romans 6:11** "In the same way, count yourselves dead to sin but alive to God in Christ Jesus."

**Romans 6:23** "For the wages of sin is death, but the gift of God is eternal life in Christ Jesus our Lord."

**Romans 7 (2 times)**

**Romans 7:25** "Thanks be to God - through Jesus Christ our Lord! So then, I myself in my mind am a slave to God's law, but in the sinful nature a slave to the law of sin."

**Romans 8 (13 times)**

**Romans 8:3** "For what the law was powerless to do in that it was weakened by the sinful nature, God did by sending his own Son in the likeness of sinful man to be a sin offering. And so he condemned sin in sinful man."

**Romans 8:11** "But if the Spirit of Him who raised Jesus from the dead dwells in you, He who raised Christ from the dead will also give life to your mortal bodies through His Spirit who dwells in you."

**Romans 8:15** "For you did not receive a spirit that makes you a slave again to fear, but you received the Spirit of sonship. And by him we cry, 'Abba, Father'."

**Romans 8:17** "Now if we are children, then we are heirs - heirs of God and co-heirs with Christ, if indeed we share in his sufferings in order that we may also share in his glory."

**Romans 8:27** "And he who searches our hearts knows the mind of the Spirit, because the Spirit intercedes for the saints in accordance with God's will."

**Romans 8:28** "And we know that in all things God works for the good of those who love him, who have been called according to his purpose."

**Romans 8:31** "What, then, shall we say in response to this? If God is for us, who can be against us?"

**Romans 8:32** "He who did not spare his own Son, but gave him up for us all - how will he not also, along with him, graciously give us all things?"

**Romans 8:33** "Who will bring any charge against those whom God has chosen? It is God who justifies."

**Romans 8:34** "Who is he that condemns? Christ Jesus, who died - more than that, who was raised to life - is at the right hand of God and is also interceding for us."

**Romans 8:39** "Neither height nor depth, nor anything else in all creation, will be able to separate us from the love of God that is in Christ Jesus our Lord."

**Romans 10 (1 time)**

**Romans 10:9** "That if you confess with your mouth the Lord Jesus and believe in your heart that God has raised Him from the dead, you will be saved."

**Romans 14 (1 time)**

**Romans 14:18** "Because anyone who serves Christ in this way is pleasing to God and approved by men."

**Romans 15 (8 times)**

**Romans 15:5** "May the God who gives endurance and encouragement give you a spirit of unity among yourselves as you follow Christ Jesus."

**Romans 15:6** "So that with one heart and mouth you may glorify the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ."

**Romans 15:8** "For I tell you that Christ has become a servant of the Jews on behalf of God's truth, to confirm the promises made to the patriarchs."

**Romans 15:15** "I have written you quite boldly on some points, as if to remind you of them again, because of the grace God gave me."

**Romans 15:16** "To be a minister of Christ Jesus to the Gentiles with the priestly duty of proclaiming the gospel of God, so that the Gentiles might become an offering acceptable to God, sanctified by the Holy Spirit."

**Romans 15:30** "I urge you, brothers, by our Lord Jesus Christ and by the love of the Spirit, to join me in my struggle by praying to God for me."

### **Romans 16 (1 time)**

**Romans 16:27** "To the only wise God be glory forever through Jesus Christ! Amen."

### **Total in Romans = 44 times**

In the book of Romans, the Disciples spoke of the Father or of God the Father at least **44 times**.

### **3.3.8- Book of 1Corinthians: 22 times**

#### **1Corinthians 1 (6 times)**

**1Corinthians 1:1** "Paul, called to be an apostle of Christ Jesus by the will of God, and our brother Sosthenes."

**1Corinthians 1:3** "Grace and peace to you from God our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ."

**1Corinthians 1:4** "I thank my God always concerning you for the grace of God which was given to you by Christ Jesus."

**1Corinthians 1:9** "God, who has called you into fellowship with his Son Jesus Christ our Lord, is faithful."

**1Corinthians 1:30** "It is because of him that you are in Christ Jesus, who has become for us wisdom from God - that is, our righteousness, holiness and redemption."

#### **1Corinthians 2 (2 times)**

**1Corinthians 2:7-8** "No, we speak of God's secret wisdom, a wisdom that has been hidden and that God destined for our glory before time began. None of the rulers of this age understood it, for if they had, they would not have crucified the Lord of glory."

#### **1Corinthians 3 (1 time)**

**1Corinthians 3:23** "And you are of Christ, and Christ is of God."

**1Corinthians 4 (1 time)**

**1Corinthians 4:1** "So then, men ought to regard us as servants of Christ and as those entrusted with the secret things of God."

**1Corinthians 6 (1 time)**

**1Corinthians 6:14** "By his power God raised the Lord from the dead, and he will raise us also."

**1Corinthians 8 (2 times)**

**1Corinthians 8:6** "Yet for us there is but one God, the Father, from whom all things came and for whom we live; and there is but one Lord, Jesus Christ, through whom all things came and through whom we live."

**1Corinthians 9 (1 time)**

**1Corinthians 9:21** "... Though I am not free from God's law but am under Christ's law ..."

**1Corinthians 11 (1 time)**

**1Corinthians 11:3** "Now I want you to realize that the head of every man is Christ, and the head of the woman is man, and the head of Christ is God."

**1Corinthians 15 (7 times)**

**1Corinthians 15:15** "More than that, we are then found to be false witnesses about God, for we have testified about God that he raised Christ from the dead. But he did not raise him if in fact the dead are not raised."

**1Corinthians 15:24** "Then the end will come, when he hands over the kingdom to God the Father after he has destroyed all dominion, authority and power."

**1Corinthians 15:27** "For he 'has put everything under his feet.' Now when it says that 'everything' has been put under him, it is clear that this does not include God himself, who put everything under Christ."

**1Corinthians 15:28** "When he has done this, then the Son himself will be made subject to him who put everything under him, so that God may be all in all."

**1Corinthians 15:57** "But thanks be to God! He gives us the victory through our Lord Jesus Christ."

**Total in 1Corinthians = 22 times**

In the book of 1Corinthians, the Disciples spoke of the Father or of God the Father at least **22 times**.

**3.3.9- Book of 2Corinthians: 36 times****2Corinthians 1 (10 times)**

**2Corinthians 1:1** "Paul, an apostle of Christ Jesus by the will of God, and Timothy our brother, to the church of God in Corinth, together with all the saints throughout Achaia:"

**2Corinthians 1:2** "Grace and peace to you from God our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ."

**2Corinthians 1:3** "Praise be to the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of compassion and the God of all comfort."

**2Corinthians 1:4** "Who comforts us in all our troubles, so that we can comfort those in any trouble with the comfort we ourselves have received from God."

**2Corinthians 1:19** "For the Son of God, Jesus Christ, who was preached among you by me and Silas and Timothy, was not "Yes" and "No," but in him it has always been "Yes."

**2Corinthians 1:21** "Now He who establishes us with you in Christ and has anointed us is God."

### **2Corinthians 2 (5 times)**

**2Corinthians 2:14** "But thanks be to God, who always leads us in triumphal procession in Christ and through us spreads everywhere the fragrance of the knowledge of him."

**2Corinthians 2:15** "For we are to God the aroma of Christ among those who are being saved and those who are perishing."

**2Corinthians 2:17** "Unlike so many, we do not peddle the word of God for profit. On the contrary, in Christ we speak before God with sincerity, like men sent from God."

### **2Corinthians 3 (2 times)**

**2Corinthians 3:4** "Such confidence as this is ours through Christ before God."

**2Corinthians 3:5** "Not that we are competent in ourselves to claim anything for ourselves, but our competence comes from God."

### **2Corinthians 4 (5 times)**

**2Corinthians 4:4** "The god of this age has blinded the minds of unbelievers, so that they cannot see the light of the gospel of the glory of Christ, who is the image of God."

**2Corinthians 4:6** "For God, who said, 'Let light shine out of darkness,' made his light shine in our hearts to give us the light of the knowledge of the glory of God in the face of Christ."

**2Corinthians 4:7** "But we have this treasure in jars of clay to show that this all-surpassing power is from God and not from us."

**2Corinthians 4:14** "Knowing that He who raised up the Lord Jesus will also raise us up with Jesus, and will present us with you."

**2Corinthians 5 (6 times)**

**2Corinthians 5:18** "All this is from God, who reconciled us to himself through Christ and gave us the ministry of reconciliation."

**2Corinthians 5:19** "That God was reconciling the world to himself in Christ, not counting men's sins against them. And he has committed to us the message of reconciliation."

**2Corinthians 5:20** "We are therefore Christ's ambassadors, as though God were making his appeal through us. We implore you on Christ's behalf: Be reconciled to God."

**2Corinthians 5:21** "God made him who had no sin to be sin for us, so that in him we might become the righteousness of God."

**2Corinthians 6 (1 time)**

**2Corinthians 6:18** "I will be a Father to you, and you will be my sons and daughters, says the Lord Almighty."

**2Corinthians 10 (1 time)**

**2Corinthians 10:13** "We, however, will not boast beyond proper limits, but will confine our boasting to the field God has assigned to us, a field that reaches even to you."

**2Corinthians 11 (2 times)**

**2Corinthians 11:31** "The God and Father of the Lord Jesus, who is to be praised forever, knows that I am not lying."

**2Corinthians 12 (1 time)**

**2Corinthians 12:19** "Have you been thinking all along that we have been defending ourselves to you? We have been speaking in the sight of God as those in Christ; and everything we do, dear friends, is for your strengthening."

**2Corinthians 13 (3 times)**

**2Corinthians 13:4** "For to be sure, he was crucified in weakness, yet he lives by God's power. Likewise, we are weak in him, yet by God's power we will live with him to serve you."

**2Corinthians 13:14** "May the grace of the Lord Jesus Christ, and the love of God, and the fellowship of the Holy Spirit be with you all."

**Total in 2Corinthians = 36 times**

In the book of 2Corinthians, the Disciples spoke of the Father or of God the Father at least **36 times**.



**3.3.10- Book of Galatians: 13 times****Galatians 1 (6 times)**

**Galatians 1:1** "Paul, an apostle - sent not from men nor by man, but by Jesus Christ and God the Father, who raised him from the dead."

**Galatians 1:3** "Grace and peace to you from God our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ."

**Galatians 1:4** "Who gave himself for our sins to rescue us from the present evil age, according to the will of our God and Father."

**Galatians 1:6** "I marvel that you are turning away so soon from Him who called you in the grace of Christ, to a different gospel."

**Galatians 1:15-16** "But when God, who set me apart from birth and called me by his grace, was pleased to reveal his Son in me so that I might preach him among the Gentiles, I did not consult any man."

**Galatians 2 (1 time)**

**Galatians 2:20** "I have been crucified with Christ and I no longer live, but Christ lives in me. The life I live in the body, I live by faith in the Son of God, who loved me and gave himself for me."

**Galatians 3 (2 times)**

**Galatians 3:20** "A mediator, however, does not represent just one party; but God is one."

**Galatians 3:26** "You are all sons of God through faith in Christ Jesus."

**Galatians 4 (4 times)**

**Galatians 4:4** "But when the time had fully come, God sent his Son, born of a woman, born under law."

**Galatians 4:6** "Because you are sons, God sent the Spirit of his Son into our hearts, the Spirit who calls out, 'Abba, Father'."

**Galatians 4:7** "So you are no longer a slave, but a son; and since you are a son, God has made you also an heir."

**Total in Galatians = 13 times**

In the book of Galatians, the Disciples spoke of the Father or of God the Father at least **13 times**.

**3.3.11- Book of Ephesians: 22 times****Ephesians 1 (7 times)**

**Ephesians 1:1** "Paul, an apostle of Christ Jesus by the will of God, to the saints in Ephesus, the faithful in Christ Jesus."

**Ephesians 1:2** "Grace and peace to you from God our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ."

**Ephesians 1:3** "Praise be to the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who has blessed us in the heavenly realms with every spiritual blessing in Christ."

**Ephesians 1:7** "In him we have redemption through his blood, the forgiveness of sins, in accordance with the riches of God's grace."

**Ephesians 1:17** "I keep asking that the God of our Lord Jesus Christ, the glorious Father, may give you the Spirit of wisdom and revelation, so that you may know him better."

### **Ephesians 2 (4 times)**

**Ephesians 2:10** "For we are God's workmanship, created in Christ Jesus to do good works, which God prepared in advance for us to do."

**Ephesians 2:12** "Remember that at that time you were separate from Christ, excluded from citizenship in Israel and foreigners to the covenants of the promise, without hope and without God in the world."

**Ephesians 2:18** "For through him we both have access to the Father by one Spirit."

### **Ephesians 3 (3 times)**

**Ephesians 3:9** "And to make plain to everyone the administration of this mystery, which for ages past was kept hidden in God, who created all things."

**Ephesians 3:12** "In him and through faith in him we may approach God with freedom and confidence."

**Ephesians 3:14** "For this reason I kneel before the Father."

### **Ephesians 4 (4 times)**

**Ephesians 4:6** "One God and Father of all, who is over all and through all and in all."

**Ephesians 4:13** "Until we all reach unity in the faith and in the knowledge of the Son of God and become mature, attaining to the whole measure of the fullness of Christ."

**Ephesians 4:32** "Be kind and compassionate to one another, forgiving each other, just as in Christ God forgave you."

### **Ephesians 5 (3 times)**

**Ephesians 5:2** "And live a life of love, just as Christ loved us and gave himself up for us as a fragrant offering and sacrifice to God."

**Ephesians 5:5** "For of this you can be sure: No immoral, impure or greedy person - such a man is an idolater - has any inheritance in the kingdom of Christ and of God."

**Ephesians 5:20** "Always giving thanks to God the Father for everything, in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ."

### **Ephesians 6 (1 time)**

**Ephesians 6:23** "Peace to the brothers, and love with faith from God the Father and the Lord Jesus Christ."

### **Total in Ephesians = 22 times**

In the book of Ephesians, the Disciples spoke of the Father or of God the Father at least **22 times**.

## **3.3.12- Book of Philippians: 15 times**

### **Philippians 1 (3 times)**

**Philippians 1:2** "Grace and peace to you from God our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ."

**Philippians 1:8** "God can testify how I long for all of you with the affection of Christ Jesus."

**Philippians 1:28** "Without being frightened in any way by those who oppose you. This is a sign to them that they will be destroyed, but that you will be saved - and that by God."

### **Philippians 2 (3 times)**

**Philippians 2:6** "Who, being in very nature God, did not consider equality with God something to be grasped."

**Philippians 2:9** "Therefore God exalted him to the highest place and gave him the name that is above every name."

**Philippians 2:11** "And every tongue confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father."

### **Philippians 3 (3 times)**

**Philippians 3:3** "For it is we who are the circumcision, we who worship by the Spirit of God, who glory in Christ Jesus, and who put no confidence in the flesh."

**Philippians 3:9** "And be found in him, not having a righteousness of my own that comes from the law, but that which is through faith in Christ - the righteousness that comes from God and is by faith."

**Philippians 3:14** "I press on toward the goal to win the prize for which God has called me heavenward in Christ Jesus."

### **Philippians 4 (6 times)**

**Philippians 4:6** "Do not be anxious about anything, but in everything, by prayer and petition, with thanksgiving, present your requests to God."

**Philippians 4:7** "And the peace of God, which transcends all understanding, will guard your hearts and your minds in Christ Jesus."

**Philippians 4:18** "I have received full payment and even more; I am amply supplied, now that I have received from Epaphroditus the gifts you sent. They are a fragrant offering, an acceptable sacrifice, pleasing to God."

**Philippians 4:19** "And my God will meet all your needs according to his glorious riches in Christ Jesus."

**Philippians 4:20** "To our God and Father be glory for ever and ever. Amen."

### **Total in Philippians = 15 times**

In the book of Philippians, the Disciples spoke of the Father or of God the Father at least **15 times**.

### **3.3.13- Book of Colossians: 15 times**

#### **Colossians 1 (8 times)**

**Colossians 1:1** "Paul, an apostle of Christ Jesus by the will of God, and Timothy our brother."

**Colossians 1:2** "To the holy and faithful brothers in Christ at Colosse: Grace and peace to you from God our Father."

**Colossians 1:3** "We always thank God, the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, when we pray for you."

**Colossians 1:12** "Giving thanks to the Father, who has qualified you to share in the inheritance of the saints in the kingdom of light."

**Colossians 1:15** "He is the image of the invisible God, the firstborn over all creation."

**Colossians 1:19** "For God was pleased to have all his fullness dwell in him."

**Colossians 1:27** "To them God has chosen to make known among the Gentiles the glorious riches of this mystery, which is Christ in you, the hope of glory."

#### **Colossians 2 (3 times)**

**Colossians 2:2** "That their hearts may be encouraged, being knit together in love, and attaining to all riches of the full assurance of understanding, to the knowledge of the mystery of God, both of the Father and of Christ."

**Colossians 2:12** "Having been buried with him in baptism and raised with him through your faith in the power of God, who raised him from the dead."

#### **Colossians 3 (3 times)**

**Colossians 3:1** "Since, then, you have been raised with Christ, set your hearts on things above, where Christ is seated at the right hand of God."

**Colossians 3:3** "For you died, and your life is now hidden with Christ in God."

**Colossians 3:17** "And whatever you do, whether in word or deed, do it all in the name of the Lord Jesus, giving thanks to God the Father through him."

### **Colossians 4 (1 time)**

**Colossians 4:3** "And pray for us, too, that God may open a door for our message, so that we may proclaim the mystery of Christ, for which I am in chains."

### **Total in Colossians = 15 times**

In the book of Colossians, the Disciples spoke of the Father or of God the Father at least **15 times**.

## **3.3.14- Book of 1Thessalonians: 18 times**

### **1Thessalonians 1 (5 times)**

**1Thessalonians 1:1** "Paul, Silas and Timothy, to the church of the Thessalonians in God the Father and the Lord Jesus Christ: Grace and peace to you."

**1Thessalonians 1:3** "We continually remember before our God and Father your work produced by faith, your labour prompted by love, and your endurance inspired by hope in our Lord Jesus Christ."

**1Thessalonians 1:9-10** "For they themselves report what kind of reception you gave us. They tell how you turned to God from idols to serve the living and true God,<sup>10</sup> and to wait for his Son from heaven, whom he raised from the dead - Jesus, who rescues us from the coming wrath."

### **1Thessalonians 2 (2 times)**

**1Thessalonians 2:14** "For you, brothers, became imitators of God's churches in Judea, which are in Christ Jesus: You suffered from your own countrymen the same things those churches suffered from the Jews."

**1Thessalonians 2:15** "Who killed the Lord Jesus and the prophets and also drove us out. They displease God and are hostile to all men."

### **1Thessalonians 3 (4 times)**

**1Thessalonians 3:11** "Now may our God and Father himself and our Lord Jesus clear the way for us to come to you."

**1Thessalonians 3:13** "May he strengthen your hearts so that you will be blameless and holy in the presence of our God and Father when our Lord Jesus comes with all his holy ones."

### **1Thessalonians 4 (3 times)**

**1Thessalonians 4:1** "Finally, brothers, we instructed you how to live in order to please God, as in fact you are living. Now we ask you and urge you in the Lord Jesus to do this more and more."

**1Thessalonians 4:14** "We believe that Jesus died and rose again and so we believe that God will bring with Jesus those who have fallen asleep in him."

**1Thessalonians 4:16** "For the Lord himself will come down from heaven, with a loud command, with the voice of the archangel and with the trumpet call of God, and the dead in Christ will rise first."

### **1Thessalonians 5 (4 times)**

**1Thessalonians 5:9** "For God did not appoint us to suffer wrath but to receive salvation through our Lord Jesus Christ."

**1Thessalonians 5:18** "Give thanks in all circumstances, for this is God's will for you in Christ Jesus."

**1Thessalonians 5:23** "May God himself, the God of peace, sanctify you through and through. May your whole spirit, soul and body be kept blameless at the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ."

### **Total in 1Thessalonians = 18 times**

In the book of 1Thessalonians, the Disciples spoke of the Father or of God the Father at least **18 times**.

### **3.3.15- Book of 2Thessalonians: 7 times**

#### **2Thessalonians 1 (5 times)**

**2Thessalonians 1:1** "Paul, Silas and Timothy, to the church of the Thessalonians in God our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ:"

**2Thessalonians 1:2** "Grace and peace to you from God the Father and the Lord Jesus Christ."

**2Thessalonians 1:8** "He will punish those who do not know God and do not obey the gospel of our Lord Jesus."

**2Thessalonians 1:11** "With this in mind, we constantly pray for you, that our God may count you worthy of his calling, and that by his power he may fulfill every good purpose of yours and every act prompted by your faith."

**2Thessalonians 1:12** "We pray this so that the name of our Lord Jesus may be glorified in you, and you in him, according to the grace of our God and the Lord Jesus Christ."

#### **2Thessalonians 2 (1 time)**

**2Thessalonians 2:16** "May our Lord Jesus Christ himself and God our Father, who loved us ..."

#### **2Thessalonians 3 (1 time)**

**2Thessalonians 3:5** "May the Lord direct your hearts into God's love and Christ's perseverance."

**Total in 2Thessalonians = 7 times**

In the book of 2Thessalonians, the Disciples spoke of the Father or of God the Father at least **7 times**.

**3.3.16- Book of 1Timothy: 6 times****1Timothy 1 (2 times)**

**1Timothy 1:1** "Paul, an apostle of Christ Jesus by the command of **God** our Savior and of Christ Jesus our hope."

**1Timothy 1:2** "To Timothy my true son in the faith: Grace, mercy and peace from **God the Father** and Christ Jesus our Lord."

**1Timothy 2 (2 times)**

**1Timothy 2:5** "For there is one **God** and one mediator between **God** and men, the man Christ Jesus."

**1Timothy 5 (1 time)**

**1Timothy 5:21** "I charge you, in the sight of **God** and Christ Jesus and the elect angels, to keep these instructions without partiality, and to do nothing out of favouritism."

**1Timothy 6 (1 time)**

**1Timothy 6:13** "In the sight of **God**, who gives life to everything, and of Christ Jesus, who while testifying before Pontius Pilate made the good confession, I charge you."

**Total in 1Timothy = 6 times**

In the book of 1Timothy, the Disciples spoke of the Father or of God the Father at least **6 times**.

**3.3.17- Book of 2Timothy: 5 times****2Timothy 1 (4 times)**

**2Timothy 1:1** "Paul, an apostle of Christ Jesus by the will of **God**, according to the promise of life that is in Christ Jesus."

**2Timothy 1:2** "To Timothy, my dear son: Grace, mercy and peace from **God the Father** and Christ Jesus our Lord."

**2Timothy 1:8** "So do not be ashamed to testify about our Lord, or ashamed of me his prisoner. But join with me in suffering for the gospel, by the power of **God**."

**2Timothy 1:18** "May the **Lord** grant that he will find mercy from the Lord on that day! You know very well in how many ways he helped me in Ephesus."

**2Timothy 4 (1 time)**

**2Timothy 4:1** "In the presence of God and of Christ Jesus, who will judge the living and the dead, and in view of his appearing and his kingdom, I give you this charge."

**Total in 2Timothy = 5 times**

In the book of 2Timothy, the Disciples spoke of the Father or of God the Father at least **5 times**.

**3.3.18- Book of Titus: 3 times****Titus 1 (3 times)**

**Titus 1:1** "Paul, a servant of God and an apostle of Jesus Christ for the faith of God's elect and the knowledge of the truth that leads to godliness."

**Titus 1:4** "To Titus, my true son in our common faith: Grace and peace from God the Father and Christ Jesus our Saviour."

**Total in Titus = 3 times**

In the book of Titus, the Disciples spoke of the Father or of God the Father at least **3 times**.

**3.3.19- Book of Philemon: 1 time****Philemon (1 time)**

**Philemon 3** "Grace to you and peace from God our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ."

**Total in Philemon = 1 time**

In the book of Philemon, the Disciples spoke of the Father or of God the Father at least **1 time**.

**3.3.20- Book of Hebrews: 31 times****Hebrews 1 (7 times)**

**Hebrews 1:1-2** "In the past God spoke to our forefathers through the prophets at many times and in various ways, but in these last days he has spoken to us by his Son, whom he appointed heir of all things, and through whom he made the universe."

**Hebrews 1:3** "The Son is the radiance of God's glory and the exact representation of his being, sustaining all things by his powerful word. After he had provided purification for sins, he sat down at the right hand of the Majesty in heaven."

**Hebrews 1:5** "For to which of the angels did God ever say, 'You are my Son; today I have become your Father'? Or again, 'I will be his Father, and he will be my Son'?"



**Hebrews 1:6** "And again, when God brings his firstborn into the world, he says, 'Let all God's angels worship him'."

**Hebrews 1:9** "You have loved righteousness and hated wickedness; therefore God, your God, has set you above your companions by anointing you with the oil of joy."

### **Hebrews 2 (3 times)**

**Hebrews 2:8** "And put everything under his feet. In putting everything under him, God left nothing that is not subject to him. Yet at present we do not see everything subject to him."

**Hebrews 2:9** "But we see Jesus, who was made a little lower than the angels, now crowned with glory and honour because he suffered death, so that by the grace of God he might taste death for everyone."

**Hebrews 2:17** "For this reason he had to be made like his brothers in every way, in order that he might become a merciful and faithful high priest in service to God, and that he might make atonement for the sins of the people."

### **Hebrews 4 (1 time)**

**Hebrews 4:14** "Therefore, since we have a great high priest who has gone through the heavens, Jesus the Son of God, let us hold firmly to the faith we profess."

### **Hebrews 5 (3 times)**

**Hebrews 5:4** "No one takes this honour upon himself; he must be called by God, just as Aaron was."

**Hebrews 5:5** "So Christ also did not take upon himself the glory of becoming a high priest. But God said to him, 'You are my Son; today I have become your Father'."

**Hebrews 5:10** "And was designated by God to be high priest in the order of Melchizedek."

### **Hebrews 6 (1 time)**

**Hebrews 6:6** "If they fall away, to be brought back to repentance, because to their loss they are crucifying the Son of God all over again and subjecting him to public disgrace."

### **Hebrews 7 (3 times)**

**Hebrews 7:1-2** "This Melchizedek was king of Salem and priest of God Most High. He met Abraham returning from the defeat of the kings and blessed him, <sup>2</sup>and Abraham gave him a tenth of everything. ..."

**Hebrews 7:3** "Without father or mother, without genealogy, without beginning of days or end of life, like the Son of God he remains a priest forever."

**Hebrews 7:25** "Therefore he is able to save completely those who come to God through him, because he always lives to intercede for them."

**Hebrews 9 (4 times)**

**Hebrews 9:14** "How much more, then, will the blood of Christ, who through the eternal Spirit offered himself unblemished to **God**, cleanse our consciences from acts that lead to death, so that we may serve the living **God**!"

**Hebrews 9:20** "He said: This is the blood of the covenant, which **God** has commanded you to keep."

**Hebrews 9:24** "For Christ did not enter a man-made sanctuary that was only a copy of the true one; he entered heaven itself, now to appear for us in **God's** presence."

**Hebrews 10 (3 times)**

**Hebrews 10:7** "Then I said: Here I am - it is written about me in the scroll - I have come to do your will, O **God**."

**Hebrews 10:12** "But when this priest had offered for all time one sacrifice for sins, he sat down at the right hand of **God**."

**Hebrews 10:29** "How much more severely do you think a man deserves to be punished who has trampled the Son of **God** under foot, who has treated as an unholy thing the blood of the covenant that sanctified him, and who has insulted the Spirit of grace?"

**Hebrews 12 (4 times)**

**Hebrews 12:2** "Let us fix our eyes on Jesus, the author and perfecter of our faith, who for the joy set before him endured the cross, scorning its shame, and sat down at the right hand of the throne of **God**."

**Hebrews 12:9** "Moreover, we have all had human fathers who disciplined us and we respected them for it. How much more should we submit to the **Father** of our spirits and live!"

**Hebrews 12:22** "But you have come to Mount Zion, to the heavenly Jerusalem, the city of the living **God**. You have come to thousands upon thousands of angels in joyful assembly."

**Hebrews 12:23** "To the church of the firstborn, whose names are written in heaven. You have come to **God**, the judge of all men, to the spirits of righteous men made perfect."

**Hebrews 13 (2 times)**

**Hebrews 13:15** "Through Jesus, therefore, let us continually offer to **God** a sacrifice of praise - the fruit of lips that confess his name."

**Hebrews 13:20** "May the **God** of peace, who through the blood of the eternal covenant brought back from the dead our Lord Jesus, that great Shepherd of the sheep."

**Total in Hebrews = 31 times**

In the book of Hebrews, the Disciples spoke of the Father or of God the Father at least **31 times**.

**3.3.21- Book of James: 4 times****James 1 (3 times)**

**James 1:1** "James, a servant of God and of the Lord Jesus Christ, to the twelve tribes scattered among the nations: Greetings."

**James 1:17** "Every good and perfect gift is from above, coming down from the Father of the heavenly lights, who does not change like shifting shadows."

**James 1:27** "Religion that God our Father accepts as pure and faultless is this: to look after orphans and widows in their distress and to keep oneself from being polluted by the world."

**James 3 (1 time)**

**James 3:9** "With the tongue we praise our Lord and Father, and with it we curse men, who have been made in God's likeness."

**Total in James = 4 times**

In the book of James, the Disciples spoke of the Father or of God the Father at least **4 times**.

**3.3.22- Book of 1Peter: 15 times****1Peter 1 (6 times)**

**1Peter 1:2** "Who have been chosen according to the foreknowledge of God the Father, through the sanctifying work of the Spirit, for obedience to Jesus Christ and sprinkling by his blood: Grace and peace be yours in abundance."

**1Peter 1:3** "Praise be to the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ! In his great mercy he has given us new birth into a living hope through the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead."

**1Peter 1:17** "Since you call on a Father who judges each man's work impartially, live your lives as strangers here in reverent fear."

**1Peter 1:21** "Through him you believe in God, who raised him from the dead and glorified him, and so your faith and hope are in God."

**1Peter 2 (2 times)**

**1Peter 2:4** "As you come to him, the living Stone - rejected by men but chosen by God and precious to him."

**1Peter 2:5** "You also, like living stones, are being built into a spiritual house to be a holy priesthood, offering spiritual sacrifices acceptable to God through Jesus Christ."

**1Peter 3 (3 times)**

**1Peter 3:18** "For Christ died for sins once for all, the righteous for the unrighteous, to bring you to God. He was put to death in the body but made alive by the Spirit."

**1Peter 3:21** "And this water symbolizes baptism that now saves you also - not the removal of dirt from the body but the pledge of a good conscience toward God. It saves you by the resurrection of Jesus Christ."

**1Peter 3:22** "Who has gone into heaven and is at God's right hand - with angels, authorities and powers in submission to him."

### **1Peter 4 (3 times)**

**1Peter 4:11** "If anyone speaks, he should do it as one speaking the very words of God. If anyone serves, he should do it with the strength God provides, so that in all things God may be praised through Jesus Christ. To him be the glory and the power for ever and ever. Amen."

### **1Peter 5 (1 time)**

**1Peter 5:10** "And the God of all grace, who called you to his eternal glory in Christ, after you have suffered a little while, will himself restore you and make you strong, firm and steadfast."

### **Total in 1Peter = 15 times**

In the book of 1Peter, the Disciples spoke of the Father or of God the Father at least **15 times**.

## **3.3.23- Book of 2Peter: 3 times**

### **2Peter 1 (3 times)**

**2Peter 1:1** "Simon Peter, a servant and apostle of Jesus Christ, to those who through the righteousness of our God and Saviour Jesus Christ have received a faith as precious as ours."

**2Peter 1:2** "Grace and peace be yours in abundance through the knowledge of God and of Jesus our Lord."

**2Peter 1:17** "For he received honour and glory from God the Father when the voice came to him from the Majestic Glory, saying, 'This is my Son, whom I love; with him I am well pleased'."

### **Total in 2Peter = 3 times**

In the book of 2Peter, the Disciples spoke of the Father or of God the Father at least **3 times**.

## **3.3.24- Book of 1John: 60 times**

### **1John 1 (3 times)**

**1John 1:2** "The life appeared; we have seen it and testify to it, and we proclaim to you the eternal life, which was with the Father and has appeared to us."

**1John 1:3** "We proclaim to you what we have seen and heard, so that you also may have fellowship with us. And our fellowship is with the Father and with his Son, Jesus Christ."

**1John 1:5** "This is the message we have heard from him and declare to you: God is light; in him there is no darkness at all."

### **1John 2 (9 times)**

**1John 2:1** "My dear children, I write this to you so that you will not sin. But if anybody does sin, we have one who speaks to the Father in our defense - Jesus Christ, the Righteous One."

**1John 2:5** "But if anyone obeys his word, God's love is truly made complete in him. This is how we know we are in him."

**1John 2:13** "... I write to you, dear children, because you have known the Father."

**1John 2:15** "Do not love the world or anything in the world. If anyone loves the world, the love of the Father is not in him."

**1John 2:16** "For everything in the world - the cravings of sinful man, the lust of his eyes and the boasting of what he has and does - comes not from the Father but from the world."

**1John 2:22** "Who is the liar? It is the man who denies that Jesus is the Christ. Such a man is the antichrist - he denies the Father and the Son."

**1John 2:23** "No one who denies the Son has the Father; whoever acknowledges the Son has the Father also."

**1John 2:24** "See that what you have heard from the beginning remains in you. If it does, you also will remain in the Son and in the Father."

### **1John 3 (5 times)**

**1John 3:1** "How great is the love the Father has lavished on us, that we should be called children of God! And that is what we are! The reason the world does not know us is that it did not know him."

**1John 3:8** "He who does what is sinful is of the devil, because the devil has been sinning from the beginning. The reason the Son of God appeared was to destroy the devil's work."

**1John 3:20** "Whenever our hearts condemn us. For God is greater than our hearts, and he knows everything."

**1John 3:21** "Dear friends, if our hearts do not condemn us, we have confidence before God."

### **1John 4 (23 times)**

**1John 4:1** "Beloved, do not believe every spirit, but test the spirits, whether they are of God; because many false prophets have gone out into the world."

**1John 4:2** "By this you know the Spirit of God: Every spirit that confesses that Jesus Christ has come in the flesh is of God."

**1John 4:3** "And every spirit that does not confess that Jesus Christ has come in the flesh is not of God. And this is the spirit of the Antichrist, which you have heard was coming, and is now already in the world."

**1John 4:7** "Beloved, let us love one another, for love is of God; and everyone who loves is born of God and knows God."

**1John 4:8** "He who does not love does not know God, for God is love."

**1John 4:9** "In this the love of God was manifested toward us, that God has sent His only begotten Son into the world, that we might live through Him."

**1John 4:10** "In this is love, not that we loved God, but that He loved us and sent His Son to be the propitiation for our sins."

**1John 4:11** "Beloved, if God so loved us, we also ought to love one another."

**1John 4:12** "No one has seen God at any time. If we love one another, God abides in us, and His love has been perfected in us."

**1John 4:14** "And we have seen and testify that the Father has sent the Son as Saviour of the world."

**1John 4:15** "Whoever confesses that Jesus is the Son of God, God abides in him, and he in God."

**1John 4:16** "And we have known and believed the love that God has for us. God is love, and he who abides in love abides in God, and God in him."

### **1John 5 (20 times)**

**1John 5:1** "Whoever believes that Jesus is the Christ is born of God, and everyone who loves Him who begot also loves him who is begotten of Him."

**1John 5:2** "By this we know that we love the children of God, when we love God and keep His commandments."

**1John 5:3** "For this is the love of God, that we keep His commandments. And His commandments are not burdensome."

**1John 5:4** "For whatever is born of God overcomes the world. And this is the victory that has overcome the world - our faith."

**1John 5:5** "Who is he who overcomes the world, but he who believes that Jesus is the Son of God?"

**1John 5:7** "For there are three that bear witness in heaven: the Father, the Word, and the Holy Spirit; and these three are one."

**1John 5:9** "If we receive the witness of men, the witness of God is greater; for this is the witness of God which He has testified of His Son."

**1John 5:10** "He who believes in the Son of God has the witness in himself; he who does not believe God has made Him a liar, because he has not believed the testimony that God has given of His Son."

**1John 5:11** "And this is the testimony: that God has given us eternal life, and this life is in His Son."

**1John 5:12** "He who has the Son has life; he who does not have the Son of God does not have life."

**1John 5:13** "These things I have written to you who believe in the name of the Son of God, that you may know that you have eternal life, and that you may continue to believe in the name of the Son of God."

**1John 5:18** "We know that whoever is born of God does not sin; but he who has been born of God keeps himself, and the wicked one does not touch him."

**1John 5:19** "We know that we are of God, and the whole world lies under the sway of the wicked one."

**1John 5:20** "We know also that the Son of God has come and has given us understanding, so that we may know him who is true. And we are in him who is true - even in his Son Jesus Christ. He is the true God and eternal life."

#### **Total in 1John = 60 times**

In the book of 1John, the Disciples spoke of the Father or of God the Father at least **60 times**.

#### **3.3.25- Book of 2John: 5 times**

**2John 3** "Grace, mercy and peace from God the Father and from Jesus Christ, the Father's Son, will be with us in truth and love."

**2John 4** "It has given me great joy to find some of your children walking in the truth, just as the Father commanded us."

**2John 9** "Anyone who runs ahead and does not continue in the teaching of Christ does not have God; whoever continues in the teaching has both the Father and the Son."

#### **Total in 2John = 5 times**

In the book of 2John, the Disciples spoke of the Father or of God the Father at least **5 times**.

#### **3.3.26- Book of Jude: 3 times**

**Jude 1** "Jude, a servant of Jesus Christ and a brother of James, to those who have been called, who are loved by God the Father and kept by Jesus Christ."

**Jude 4** "For certain men whose condemnation was written about long ago have secretly slipped in among you. They are godless men, who change the grace of our God into a license for immorality and deny Jesus Christ our only Sovereign and Lord."

**Jude 25** "To the only God our Saviour be glory, majesty, power and authority, through Jesus Christ our Lord, before all ages, now and forevermore! Amen."

**Total in Jude = 3 times**

In the book of Jude, the Disciples spoke of the Father or of God the Father at least **3 times**.

**3.3.27- Book of Revelation: 15 times**

**Revelation 1 (2 times)**

**Revelation 1:1** "The revelation from Jesus Christ, which God gave him to show his servants what must soon take place. He made it known by sending his angel to his servant John."

**Revelation 1:6** "And has made us to be a kingdom and priests to serve his God and Father - to him be glory and power for ever and ever! Amen!"

**Revelation 2 (1 time)**

**Revelation 2:18** "To the angel of the church in Thyatira write: These are the words of the Son of God, whose eyes are like blazing fire and whose feet are like burnished bronze."

**Revelation 5 (2 times)**

**Revelation 5:9** "And they sang a new song, saying: You are worthy to take the scroll and to open its seals, because you were slain, and with your blood you purchased for God persons from every tribe and language and people and nation."

**Revelation 5:10** "You have made them to be a kingdom and priests to serve our God, and they will reign on the earth."

**Revelation 7 (1 time)**

**Revelation 7:10** "And they cried out in a loud voice: Salvation belongs to our God, who sits on the throne, and to the Lamb."

**Revelation 12 (2 times)**

**Revelation 12:10** "Then I heard a loud voice in heaven say: Now have come the salvation and the power and the kingdom of our God, and the authority of his Messiah. For the accuser of our brothers and sisters, who accuses them before our God day and night, has been hurled down."

**Revelation 14 (2 times)**

**Revelation 14:1** "Then I looked, and there before me was the Lamb, standing on Mount Zion, and with him 144,000 who had his name and his Father's name written on their foreheads."

**Revelation 14:4** "These are those who did not defile themselves with women, for they remained virgins. They follow the Lamb wherever he goes. They were purchased from among mankind and offered as firstfruits to God and the Lamb."



**Revelation 20 (1 time)**

**Revelation 20:6** "Blessed and holy are those who share in the first resurrection. The second death has no power over them, but they will be priests of **God** and of Christ and will reign with him for a thousand years."

**Revelation 21 (2 times)**

**Revelation 21:22** "I did not see a temple in the city, because the **Lord God Almighty** and the Lamb are its temple."

**Revelation 21:23** "The city does not need the sun or the moon to shine on it, for the glory of **God** gives it light, and the Lamb is its lamp."

**Revelation 22 (2 times)**

**Revelation 22:1** "Then the angel showed me the river of the water of life, as clear as crystal, flowing from the throne of **God** and of the Lamb."

**Revelation 22:3** "No longer will there be any curse. The throne of **God** and of the Lamb will be in the city, and his servants will serve him."

**Total in Revelation = 15 times**

In the book of Revelation, the Disciples spoke of the Father or of God the Father at least **15 times**.

**3.3.28- Conclusion**

In conclusion, John the Baptist, the Apostles and the other Disciples of Jesus Christ spoke directly of God the Father different from Jesus Christ at least 443 times in the Bible, depending on what version of the Bible you have. As part of this work we have used both NIV and NKJV. We have also consulted a dozen of other English versions.

### 3.4- Fourth Research: The Disciples Acknowledge that Jesus is the Son of God

#### 3.4.1- Introduction

The work given to us is to go through the Bible in search of all the passages in which ***the Apostles and the other Disciples acknowledged that Jesus Christ is the Son of God.***

#### 3.4.2- The Bible answers us

To verify if some demons in the flesh are right to say that ***Jesus Christ would be at the same time God the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit***, we have searched through the Bible. And to carry out a reliable and more convincing work, we used more than twenty versions of the Bible in many languages. ***We found many passages in which the Apostles and the other Disciples have acknowledged and declared that Jesus Christ is the Son of God and not God the Father.*** We have underlined and bolded all the words and/or expressions sought in each verse. **The total of each book is given at the beginning and at the end of the said book.**

The books in which we found the words and/or expressions sought are: **Matthew, Mark, Luke, John, Acts of the Apostles, Romans, 1Corinthians, 2Corinthians, Galatians, Ephesians, Colossians, 1Thessalonians, Hebrews, 1Peter, 2Peter, 1John, 2John, and Revelation.**

#### 3.4.3- Book of Matthew: 3 times

##### Matthew 14 (1time)

**Matthew 14:33** "Then those who were in the boat worshiped him, saying, truly you are the Son of God."

##### Matthew 16 (1 time)

**Matthew 16:16** "Simon Peter answered, 'You are the Christ, the Son of the living God'."

##### Matthew 27 (1 time)

**Matthew 27:54** "When the centurion and those with him who were guarding Jesus saw the earthquake and all that had happened, they were terrified, and exclaimed, 'Surely he was the Son of God'!"

**Total in Matthew = 3 times**

#### 3.4.4- Book of Mark: 2 times

##### Marc 1 (1 time)

**Marc 1:1** "The beginning of the gospel about Jesus Christ, the Son of God."

##### Mark 15 (1 time)

**Mark 15:39** "And when the centurion, who stood there in front of Jesus, heard his cry and saw how he died, he said, "Surely this man was the Son of God!"

**Total in Mark = 2 times**

**3.4.5- Book of Luke: 3 times****Luke 2 (1 time)**

**Luke 2:26** "It had been revealed to him by the Holy Spirit that he would not die before he had seen the Lord's Christ."

**Luke 3 (1 time)**

**Luke 3:38** "The son of Enosh, the son of Seth, the son of Adam, the son of God."

**Luke 9 (1 time)**

**Luke 9:20** "But what about you?" he asked. "Who do you say I am?" Peter answered, "The Christ of God."

**Total in Luke = 3 times**

**3.4.6- Book of John: 18 times****John 1 (6 times)**

**John 1:14** "The Word became flesh and made his dwelling among us. We have seen his glory, the glory of the One and Only, who came from the Father, full of grace and truth."

**John 1:18** "No one has ever seen God, but God the One and Only, who is at the Father's side, has made him known."

**John 1:29** "The next day John saw Jesus coming toward him and said, 'Look, the Lamb of God, who takes away the sin of the world!'"

**John 1:34** "I have seen and I testify that this is the Son of God."

**John 1:36** "When he saw Jesus passing by, he said, 'Look, the Lamb of God!'"

**John 1:49** "Then Nathanael declared: Rabbi, you are the Son of God; you are the King of Israel."

**John 3 (4 times)**

**John 3:2** "... Rabbi, we know you are a teacher who has come from God. For no one could perform the miraculous signs you are doing if God were not with him."

**John 3:35** "The Father loves the Son and has placed everything in his hands."

**John 3:36** "Whoever believes in the Son has eternal life, but whoever rejects the Son will not see life, for God's wrath remains on him."

**John 6 (1 time)**

**John 6:69** "Also we have come to believe and know that You are the Christ, the Son of the living God."

**John 9 (2 times)**

**John 9:35-38** "Jesus heard that they had cast him out; and when He had found him, He said to him, "Do you believe in the Son of God?" <sup>36</sup>He answered and said, "Who is He, Lord, that I may believe in Him?" <sup>37</sup>And Jesus said to him, "You have both seen Him and it is He who is talking with you." <sup>38</sup>Then he said, "Lord, I believe!" And he worshiped Him."

**John 11 (1 time)**

**John 11:27** "Yes, Lord," she told him, "I believe that you are the Christ, the Son of God, who was to come into the world."

**John 13 (3 times)**

**John 13:1-3** "It was just before the Passover Feast. Jesus knew that the time had come for him to leave this world and go to the Father. Having loved his own who were in the world, he now showed them the full extent of his love. <sup>2</sup>The evening meal was being served, and the devil had already prompted Judas Iscariot, son of Simon, to betray Jesus. <sup>3</sup>Jesus knew that the Father had put all things under his power, and that he had come from God and was returning to God."

**John 20 (1 time)**

**John 20:31** "But these are written that you may believe that Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God, and that by believing you may have life in his name."

**Total in John = 18 times**

**3.4.7- Book of Acts of the Apostles: 11 times****Acts 2 (1 time)**

**Acts 2:30** "Therefore, being a prophet, and knowing that God had sworn with an oath to him that of the fruit of his body, according to the flesh, He would raise up the Christ to sit on his throne."

**Acts 3 (4 times)**

**Acts 3:13** "The God of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, the God of our fathers, glorified His Servant Jesus, whom you delivered up and denied in the presence of Pilate, when he was determined to let Him go."

**Acts 3:15** "And killed the Prince of life, whom God raised from the dead, of which we are witnesses."

**Acts 3:18** "But this is how God fulfilled what he had foretold through all the prophets, saying that his Christ would suffer."

**Acts 3:26** "To you first, God, having raised up His Servant Jesus, sent Him to bless you, in turning away every one of you from your iniquities."

**Acts 4 (2 times)**

**Acts 4:26-27** "The kings of the earth took their stand, and the rulers were gathered together against the Lord and against His Christ. <sup>27</sup>For truly against Your holy Servant Jesus, whom You anointed..."

**Acts 7 (1 time)**

**Acts 7:56** "Look, he said, I see heaven open and the Son of Man standing at the right hand of God."

**Acts 8 (1 time)**

**Acts 8:37** "Then Philip said, "If you believe with all your heart, you may." And he answered and said, 'I believe that Jesus Christ is the Son of God'."

**Acts 9 (1 time)**

**Acts 9:20** "At once he began to preach in the synagogues that Jesus is the Son of God."

**Acts 13 (1 time)**

**Acts 13:33** "God has fulfilled this for us their children, in that He has raised up Jesus. As it is also written in the second Psalm: You are My Son, today I have begotten You."

**Total in Acts of the Apostles = 11 times**

**3.4.8- Book of Romans: 7 times****Romans 1 (3 times)**

**Romans 1:3-4** "Concerning His Son Jesus Christ our Lord, who was born of the seed of David according to the flesh, <sup>4</sup>and declared to be the Son of God with power according to the Spirit of holiness, by the resurrection from the dead."

**Romans 1:9** "For God is my witness, whom I serve with my spirit in the gospel of His Son, that without ceasing I make mention of you always in my prayers."

**Romans 5 (1 time)**

**Romans 5:10** "For if, when we were God's enemies, we were reconciled to him through the death of his Son, how much more, having been reconciled, shall we be saved through his life!"

**Romans 8 (3 times)**

**Romans 8:3** "For what the law was powerless to do in that it was weakened by the sinful nature, God did by sending his own Son in the likeness of sinful man to be a sin offering. And so he condemned sin in sinful man."

**Romans 8:29** "For whom He foreknew, He also predestined to be conformed to the image of His Son, that He might be the firstborn among many brethren."

**Romans 8:32** "He who did not spare His own Son, but delivered Him up for us all, how shall He not with Him also freely give us all things?"

**Total in Romans = 7 times**

### **3.4.9- Book of 1Corinthians: 2 times**

#### **1Corinthians 1 (1 time)**

**1Corinthians 1:9** "God, who has called you into fellowship with his Son Jesus Christ our Lord, is faithful."

#### **1Corinthians 15 (1 time)**

**1Corinthians 15:28** "When he has done this, then the Son himself will be made subject to him who put everything under him, so that God may be all in all."

**Total in 1Corinthians = 2 times**

### **3.4.10- Book of 2Corinthians: 4 times**

#### **2Corinthians 1 (3 times)**

**2Corinthians 1:2** "Grace and peace to you from God our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ."

**2Corinthians 1:3** "Praise be to the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of compassion and the God of all comfort."

**2Corinthians 1:19** "For the Son of God, Jesus Christ, who was preached among you by me and Silas and Timothy, was not "Yes" and "No," but in him it has always been 'Yes'."

#### **2Corinthians 11 (1 time)**

**2Corinthians 11:31** "The God and Father of the Lord Jesus, who is to be praised forever, knows that I am not lying."

**Total in 2Corinthians = 4 times**

### **3.4.11- Book of Galatians: 4 times**

#### **Galatians 1 (1 time)**

**Galatians 1:15-16** "But when God, who set me apart from birth and called me by his grace, was pleased to reveal His Son in me so that I might preach him among the Gentiles, I did not consult any man."

#### **Galatians 2 (1 time)**

**Galatians 2:20** "I have been crucified with Christ and I no longer live, but Christ lives in me. The life I live in the body, I live by faith in the Son of God, who loved me and gave himself for me."

**Galatians 4 (2 times)**

**Galatians 4:4** "But when the time had fully come, God sent His Son, born of a woman, born under law."

**Galatians 4:6** "Because you are sons, God sent the Spirit of His Son into our hearts, the Spirit who calls out, 'Abba, Father'."

**Total in Galatians = 4 times**

**3.4.12- Book of Ephesians: 5 times****Ephesians 1 (4 times)**

**Ephesians 1:2** "Grace and peace to you from God our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ."

**Ephesians 1:3** "Praise be to the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who has blessed us in the heavenly realms with every spiritual blessing in Christ."

**Ephesians 1:17** "I keep asking that the God of our Lord Jesus Christ, the glorious Father, may give you the Spirit of wisdom and revelation, so that you may know him better."

**Ephesians 4 (1time)**

**Ephesians 4:13** "Until we all reach unity in the faith and in the knowledge of the Son of God and become mature, attaining to the whole measure of the fullness of Christ."

**Total in Ephesians = 5 times**

**3.4.13- Book of Colossians: 3 times****Colossians 1 (3 times)**

**Colossians 1:3** "We always thank God, the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, when we pray for you."

**Colossians 1:13** "He has delivered us from the power of darkness and conveyed us into the kingdom of the Son of His love."

**Colossians 1:15** "He is the image of the invisible God, the firstborn over all creation."

**Total in Colossians = 3 times**

**3.4.14- Book of 1Thessalonians: 2 times****1Thessalonians 1 (2 times)**

**1Thessalonians 1:9-10** "For they themselves report what kind of reception you gave us. They tell how you turned to God from idols to serve the living and true God, <sup>10</sup> and to wait for His Son from heaven, whom he raised from the dead - Jesus, who rescues us from the coming wrath."

**Total in 1Thessalonians = 2 times**

**3.4.15- Book of Hebrews: 11 times****Hebrews 1 (3 times)**

**Hebrews 1:2** "But in these last days he has spoken to us by His Son, whom he appointed heir of all things, and through whom he made the universe."

**Hebrews 1:3** "The Son is the radiance of God's glory and the exact representation of his being, sustaining all things by his powerful word. After he had provided purification for sins, he sat down at the right hand of the Majesty in heaven."

**Hebrews 1:9** "But to the Son He says ..."

**Hebrews 3 (1 time)**

**Hebrews 3:6** "But Christ as a Son over His own house, whose house we are if we hold fast the confidence and the rejoicing of the hope firm to the end."

**Hebrews 4 (1 time)**

**Hebrews 4:14** "Therefore, since we have a great high priest who has gone through the heavens, Jesus the Son of God, let us hold firmly to the faith we profess."

**Hebrews 5 (2 times)**

**Hebrews 5:5** "So Christ also did not take upon himself the glory of becoming a high priest. But God said to him, 'You are my Son'; today I have become your Father'."

**Hebrews 5:8** "Though He was a Son, yet He learned obedience by the things which He suffered."

**Hebrews 6 (1 time)**

**Hebrews 6:6** "If they fall away, to be brought back to repentance, because to their loss they are crucifying the Son of God all over again and subjecting him to public disgrace."

**Hebrews 7 (2 times)**

**Hebrews 7:3** "... Like the Son of God he remains a priest forever."

**Hebrews 7:28** "... But the word of the oath, which came after the law, appoints the Son who has been perfected forever."

**Hebrews 10 (1 time)**

**Hebrews 10:29** "How much more severely do you think a man deserves to be punished who has trampled the Son of God under foot, who has treated as an unholy thing the blood of the covenant that sanctified him, and who has insulted the Spirit of grace?"

**Total in Hebrews = 11 times**



**3.4.16- Book of 1Peter: 1 time****1Peter 1 (1 time)**

**1Peter 1:3** "Praise be to the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ! In his great mercy he has given us new birth into a living hope through the resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead."

**Total in 1Peter = 1 time**

**3.4.17- Book of 2Peter: 1 time****2Peter 1 (1 time)**

**2Peter 1:17** "For He received from **God the Father** honour and glory when such a voice came to Him from the Excellent Glory: This is My beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased."

**Total in 2Peter = 1 time**

**3.4.18- Book of 1John: 23 times****1John 1 (2 times)**

**1John 1:3** "We proclaim to you what we have seen and heard, so that you also may have fellowship with us. And our fellowship is with the Father and with His Son, Jesus Christ."

**1John 1:7** "But if we walk in the light as He is in the light, we have fellowship with one another, and the blood of Jesus Christ His Son cleanses us from all sin."

**1John 2 (4 times)**

**1John 2:22** "Who is the liar? It is the man who denies that Jesus is the Christ. Such a man is the antichrist - he denies the Father and the Son."

**1John 2:23** "No one who denies the Son has the Father; whoever acknowledges the Son has the Father also."

**1John 2:24** "See that what you have heard from the beginning remains in you. If it does, you also will remain in the Son and in the Father."

**1John 3 (2 times)**

**1John 3:8** "He who does what is sinful is of the devil, because the devil has been sinning from the beginning. The reason the Son of God appeared was to destroy the devil's work."

**1John 3:23** "And this is His commandment: that we should believe on the name of His Son Jesus Christ and love one another, as He gave us commandment."

**1John 4 (4 times)**

**1John 4:9** "In this the love of God was manifested toward us, that God has sent His only begotten Son into the world, that we might live through Him."

**1John 4:10** "In this is love, not that we loved God, but that He loved us and sent His Son to be the propitiation for our sins."

**1John 4:14** "And we have seen and testify that the Father has sent the Son as Saviour of the world."

**1John 4:15** "Whoever confesses that Jesus is the Son of God, God abides in him, and he in God."

### **1John 5 (11 times)**

**1John 5:5** "Who is he who overcomes the world, but he who believes that Jesus is the Son of God?"

**1John 5:9** "If we receive the witness of men, the witness of God is greater; for this is the witness of God which He has testified of His Son."

**1John 5:10** "He who believes in the Son of God has the witness in himself; he who does not believe God has made Him a liar, because he has not believed the testimony that God has given of His Son."

**1John 5:11** "And this is the testimony: that God has given us eternal life, and this life is in His Son."

**1John 5:12** "He who has the Son has life; he who does not have the Son of God does not have life."

**1John 5:13** "These things I have written to you who believe in the name of the Son of God, that you may know that you have eternal life, and that you may continue to believe in the name of the Son of God."

**1John 5:20** "We know also that the Son of God has come and has given us understanding, so that we may know him who is true. And we are in him who is true - even in His Son Jesus Christ. He is the true God and eternal life."

**Total in 1John = 23 times**

### **3.4.19- Book of 2John: 2 times**

**2John 3** "Grace, mercy and peace from God the Father and from Jesus Christ, the Father's Son, will be with us in truth and love."

**2John 9** "... Whoever continues in the teaching has both the Father and the Son."

**Total in 2John = 2 times**

### **3.4.20- Book of Revelation: 7 times**

#### **Revelation 2 (1 time)**

**Revelation 2:18** "To the angel of the church in Thyatira write: These are the words of the Son of God, whose eyes are like blazing fire and whose feet are like burnished bronze."

**Revelation 14 (2 times)**

**Revelation 14:1** "Then I looked, and there before me was the Lamb, standing on Mount Zion, and with him 144,000 who had His name and His Father's name written on their foreheads."

**Revelation 21 (2 times)**

**Revelation 21:22** "I did not see a temple in the city, because the Lord God Almighty and the Lamb are its temple."

**Revelation 21:23** "The city does not need the sun or the moon to shine on it, for the glory of God gives it light, and the Lamb is its lamp."

**Revelation 22 (2 times)**

**Revelation 22:1** "Then the angel showed me the river of the water of life, as clear as crystal, flowing from the throne of God and of the Lamb."

**Revelation 22:3** "No longer will there be any curse. The throne of God and of the Lamb will be in the city, and his servants will serve him."

**Total in Revelation = 7 times**

**Grand Total in the Bible = 110 times**

**3.4.21- Conclusion**

***The Apostles as well as the other Disciples of Christ*** acknowledged that Jesus Christ is the Son of God, the Son of the Most High God.

Therefore, we can conclude that Jesus Christ, of His own volition, is neither God the Father, nor the Holy Spirit. And Jesus Christ, of His Father and His God's free will, is neither God the Father, nor the Holy Spirit. And Jesus Christ even in the sight of ***His Apostles and His other Disciples*** is neither God the Father, nor the Holy Spirit. And Jesus Christ, according to the Holy Bible, is neither God the Father, nor the Holy Spirit. ***Therefore, Jesus Christ can only be God the Father and the Holy Spirit according to the wishes of a few demons in the flesh who have sworn to show the full extent of their sin.***

### 3.5- Fifth Research: Did Jesus Declare that He Was God the Father and the Holy Spirit?

#### 3.5.1- Introduction

The work given to us is to go through the Bible in search of all the passages in which ***Jesus declared that He is God the Father and the Holy Spirit.***

#### 3.5.2- The Bible answers us

To verify if some demons in the flesh are right to say that ***Jesus Christ would be at the same time God the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit***, we have searched through the Bible. And to carry out a reliable and more convincing work, we used more than twenty versions of the Bible in many languages. **We found no passage, not even one in which Jesus declared, either directly or indirectly, that He is God the Father and the Holy Spirit.**

Jesus, who knew very well that some demons will later try to assign to Him positions or titles that are not His, had chosen to silence them and to deny them such an opportunity. In so doing, He had clearly established the difference between His Father and Himself. This is what He had said in connection with that: ***"You have heard Me say to you, 'I am going away and coming back to you.' If you loved Me, you would rejoice because I said, 'I am going to the Father,' for My Father is greater than I."*** John 14:28

Here are a few other verses in which Jesus chooses to clearly establish the difference that exists between His Father and Himself.

#### 3.5.3- Book of Matthew

**Matthew 11:27** "All things have been committed to me by **My Father**. No one knows **the Son** except the **Father**, and no one knows the **Father** except **the Son** and those to whom **the Son** chooses to reveal him."

**Matthew 12:50** "For whoever does the will of **My Father** in heaven is my brother and sister and mother."

**Matthew 16:17** "Jesus replied: Blessed are you, Simon son of Jonah, for this was not revealed to you by man, but by **My Father** in heaven."

**Matthew 18:10** "See that you do not look down on one of these little ones. For I tell you that their angels in heaven always see the face of **My Father** in heaven."

**Matthew 20:23** "Jesus said to them: You will indeed drink from my cup, but to sit at my right or left **is not for me to grant**. These places belong to those for whom they have been prepared by **My Father**."

**Matthew 24:36** "No one knows about that day or hour, not even the angels in heaven, nor **the Son**, but **only the Father**."

**Matthew 26:53** "Do you think I cannot call on **My Father**, and he will at once put at my disposal more than twelve legions of angels?"

### 3.5.4- Book of Mark

**Mark 13:32** "No one knows about that day or hour, not even the angels in heaven, nor **the Son**, but **only the Father**."

### 3.5.5- Book of John

**John 5:20** "For **the Father** loves **the Son** and shows him all he does. Yes, to your amazement he will show him even greater things than these."

**John 5:22** "Moreover, **the Father** judges no one, but has entrusted all judgment to **the Son**."

**John 14:24** "He who does not love me will not obey my teaching. These words you hear are not my own; they belong to **the Father** who sent me."

**John 15:9** "As **the Father** has loved me, so have I loved you. Now remain in my love."

**John 16:16** "A little while, and you will not see Me; and again a little while, and you will see Me, because I go to **the Father**."

**John 20:17** "Jesus said: Do not hold on to me, for I have not yet returned to **the Father**. Go instead to my brothers and tell them, 'I am returning to **My Father** and **Your Father**, to **My God** and **Your God**.'"

**John 20:21** "Again Jesus said: Peace be with you! As **the Father** has sent me, I am sending you."

If Jesus has not declared that He is God the Father and the Holy Spirit, it is simply because He is not. **So this is not an oversight on His part.**

### 3.5.6- Conclusion

Jesus has never, either directly or indirectly, declared that He is God the Father and the Holy Spirit. Therefore, we can conclude that Jesus Christ, of His own volition, is neither God the Father, nor the Holy Spirit. And Jesus Christ, of His Father and His God's free will, is neither God the Father, nor the Holy Spirit. And Jesus Christ, according to the Holy Bible, is neither God the Father, nor the Holy Spirit. ***Therefore, Jesus Christ can only be God the Father and the Holy Spirit according to the wishes of a few demons in the flesh who in their pride and their vehement desire to turn Children of God away from the truth, claim to know who Jesus is, better than God the Father, and better than Jesus Christ himself.***

### 3.6- Sixth Research: Did the Disciples Declare that Jesus is God the Father and the Holy Spirit?

#### 3.6.1- Introduction

The work given to us is to go through the Bible in search of all the passages in which ***the Apostles and the other Disciples declared that Jesus Christ himself is God the Father and the Holy Spirit.***

#### 3.6.2- The Bible answers us

To verify if some demons in the flesh are right to say that ***Jesus Christ is at the same time God the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit***, we have searched through the Bible. And to carry out a reliable and more convincing work, we used more than twenty versions of the Bible in many languages. **We found no passage, not even one in which the Apostles and the other Disciples declared, either directly or indirectly, that Jesus Christ is God the Father and the Holy Spirit.**

For the Apostles and the other Disciples of Jesus, the identity of their Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ has never been a problem. Not only did the Father reveal it to them as Matthew 16:17 confirms, "*Jesus answered and said to him: Blessed are you, Simon Bar-Jonah, for flesh and blood has not revealed this to you, but My Father who is in Heaven*", but the Lord himself repeatedly confirmed it. None of them has ever had doubts about the real person of Jesus, and they all made it known in their various testimonies, as you can verify in the verses below as well as in the Fourth Research.

#### 3.6.3- Book of Matthew

**Matthew 14:33** "Then those who were in the boat worshiped him, saying, truly you are **the Son of God.**"

**Matthew 16:16** "Simon Peter answered, "You are the Christ, **the Son of the living God.**"

**Matthew 27:54** "When the centurion and those with him who were guarding Jesus saw the earthquake and all that had happened, they were terrified, and exclaimed, 'Surely he was **the Son of God!**'"

#### 3.6.4- Book of Mark

**Marc 1:1** "The beginning of the gospel about Jesus Christ, **the Son of God.**"

**Mark 15:39** "And when the centurion, who stood there in front of Jesus, heard his cry and saw how he died, he said, 'Surely this man was **the Son of God!**'"

#### 3.6.5- Book of John

**John 1:34** "I have seen and I testify that this is **the Son of God.**"

**John 1:49** "Then Nathanael declared, "Rabbi, you are **the Son of God**; you are the King of Israel."

**John 11:27** "Yes, Lord," she told him, "I believe that you are the Christ, the Son of God, who was to come into the world."

**John 20:31** "But these are written that you may believe that Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God, and that by believing you may have life in his name."

### 3.6.6- Book of Acts of the Apostles

**Acts 8:37** "Then Philip said, "If you believe with all your heart, you may." And he answered and said, 'I believe that Jesus Christ is the Son of God'."

**Acts 9:20** "At once he began to preach in the synagogues that Jesus is the Son of God."

### 3.6.7- Book of 1Corinthians

**1Corinthians 1:9** "God, who has called you into fellowship with his Son Jesus Christ our Lord, is faithful."

If these Apostles and these other Disciples of Jesus hear this blasphemous doctrine that these demons are trotting out, they will just say that some demons never lack ingenuity.

### 3.6.8- Conclusion

***The Apostles and the other Disciples have never declared, either directly or indirectly, that Jesus Christ himself is God the Father and the Holy Spirit. Therefore, we can conclude that Jesus Christ, to the knowledge of His Apostles and His other Disciples, is neither God the Father, nor the Holy Spirit. And Jesus Christ, according to the Holy Bible, is neither God the Father, nor the Holy Spirit. Therefore, Jesus Christ can only be God the Father and the Holy Spirit according to the will of a few demons in the flesh who are trying desperately to falsify the Bible, hoping they will succeed where their predecessors have failed. In their vanity, they are trying to give the impression that they know who Jesus is, better than God the Father, better than Jesus Christ himself, and better than all the Apostles and the Disciples of Jesus.***

### 3.7- Seventh Research: Who is Jesus in the Sight of God the Father and His Angels?

#### 3.7.1- Introduction

The work given to us is to go through the Bible in search of all the passages in which ***God the Father and His Angels speak about Jesus; another way of knowing if according to God the Father and His Angels Jesus would be at the same time God the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit.***

#### 3.7.2- The Bible answers us

To verify if some demons in the flesh are right to say that ***Jesus Christ would be at the same time God the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit***, we have searched through the Bible to find out what God the Father himself says about Jesus, and also what the Angels say about Jesus. And to carry out a reliable and more convincing work, we used more than twenty versions of the Bible in many languages. **We found no passage in which God the Father declared that Jesus is himself God the Father and the Holy Spirit. We have not also found any passage in which the Angels declared that Jesus Himself is God the Father and the Holy Spirit.**

On the contrary, we found passages in which ***God the Father and His Angels acknowledged and declared that Jesus Christ is the Son of God.***

#### 3.7.3- God the Father acknowledges that He has a Son

**Psalms 2:7** "I will declare the decree: **The Lord has said to Me, 'You are My Son,** today I have begotten You."

**Matthew 3:17** "And suddenly a voice came from heaven, saying: **This is My beloved Son,** in whom I am well pleased."

**Matthew 17:5** "While he was still speaking, behold, a bright cloud overshadowed them; and suddenly a voice came out of the cloud, saying: **This is My beloved Son,** in whom I am well pleased. Hear Him!"

**Mark 1:11** "Then a voice came from heaven, '**You are My beloved Son,** in whom I am well pleased'."

**Mark 9:7** "And a cloud came and overshadowed them; and a voice came out of the cloud, saying: **This is My beloved Son. Hear Him!**"

**Luke 3:22** "And the Holy Spirit descended in bodily form like a dove upon Him, and a voice came from heaven which said, '**You are My beloved Son;** in You I am well pleased'."

**Luke 9:35** "And a voice came out of the cloud, saying: **This is My beloved Son. Hear Him!**"

**Acts 13:32-33** "And we declare to you glad tidings - that promise which was made to the fathers. <sup>33</sup>God has fulfilled this for us their children, in that He has raised up Jesus. **As it is also written in the second Psalm: 'You are My Son,** today I have begotten You'."



**Hebrews 1:5** "For to which of the angels did He ever say: **You are My Son, today I have begotten You**? And again: I will be to Him a Father, and **He shall be to Me a Son**?"

**Hebrews 5:5** "So also Christ did not glorify Himself to become High Priest, but **it was He who said to Him: You are My Son**, today I have begotten You."

**2Peter 1:16-17** "For we did not follow cunningly devised fables when we made known to you the power and coming of our Lord Jesus Christ, but were eyewitnesses of His majesty. <sup>17</sup>For **He received from God the Father** honour and glory when such a voice came to Him from the Excellent Glory: **This is My beloved Son**, in whom I am well pleased."

#### **3.7.4- The Angels acknowledge and declare that Jesus is the Son of God**

**Luke 1:28-32** "And having come in, the angel said to her, "Rejoice, highly favoured one, the Lord is with you; blessed are you among women!" <sup>29</sup>But when she saw him, she was troubled at his saying, and considered what manner of greeting this was. <sup>30</sup>Then the angel said to her: Do not be afraid, Mary, for you have found favour with God. <sup>31</sup>And behold, you will conceive in your womb and bring forth a Son, and shall call His name Jesus. <sup>32</sup>**He will be great, and will be called the Son of the Highest**; and the Lord God will give Him the throne of His father David."

**Luke 1:35** "And the angel answered and said to her: The Holy Spirit will come upon you, and the power of the Highest will overshadow you; therefore, also, **that Holy One who is to be born will be called the Son of God**."

#### **3.7.5- Conclusion**

Neither God the Father nor His Angels have ever declared, either directly nor indirectly, that Jesus is God the Father and the Holy Spirit. However, they have all acknowledged and declared that Jesus Christ is the Son of God, the Son of God Most High.

Therefore, we can conclude that Jesus Christ, of His own volition, is neither God the Father, nor the Holy Spirit. And Jesus Christ, of His Father and His God's free will, is neither God the Father, nor the Holy Spirit. And Jesus Christ, even in the sight of God's Angels, is neither God the Father, nor the Holy Spirit. And Jesus Christ, according to the Holy Bible, is neither God the Father, nor the Holy Spirit. ***Therefore, Jesus Christ can only be God the Father and the Holy Spirit according to the wishes of a few demons in the flesh who believe they have a secret that even God, Creator of Heaven and earth does not have.***

### 3.8- Eight Research:

#### Did satan declare that Jesus is God the Father and the Holy Spirit?

##### 3.8.1- Introduction

The work given to us is to go through the Bible in search of all the passages in which ***satan declared that Jesus Himself is God the Father and the Holy Spirit.***

##### 3.8.2- The Bible answers us

To verify if some demons in the flesh are right to say that ***Jesus Christ would be at the same time God the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit***, we have searched through the Bible. And to carry out a reliable and more convincing work, we used more than twenty versions of the Bible in many languages. **We found no passage in which satan declared that Jesus Himself is God the Father and the Holy Spirit.**

Satan who knows Heaven well and who knows how God's Government is made up, has never dared to say or suggest that Jesus would be ***God the Father and the Holy Spirit***. On the contrary, he acknowledged and respected the position of Jesus in the Government of God, which is the position of the Son of God. He has not mistaken about this even once, and has not dared to give another title to Jesus except the title of the Son of God, as can be verified in the verses below. Satan should really congratulate his demons in the flesh who had the nerve he himself did not have.

In this passage of Matthew 4:5-6, you see how satan demonstrates that he knows very well the configuration of God's team.

##### 3.8.3- Book of Matthew

**Matthew 4:5-6** "Then the devil took Him up into the holy city, set Him on the pinnacle of the temple, <sup>6</sup>and said to Him: If **You are the Son of God**, throw Yourself down. For it is written: '**He** shall give **His angels** charge over **you**,' and, 'in their hands they shall bear you up, lest you dash your foot against a stone'."

Satan clearly acknowledges here that Jesus is the Son of God; he acknowledges that God the Father has Angels; and he knows that this same God the Father gave His angels charge over the Son. Satan knows very well what he is talking about. Believing that some demons in the flesh would know God's Government better than their father, the devil, would be absurd.

And as you can see, Jesus did not rebuke satan for having regarded Him as the Son of God, and not as God the Father or even the Holy Spirit. Neither did He reprimand satan for having said that a Father who would not exist according to some demons in the flesh, would have given His angels charge over Him. If Jesus who could not tolerate such a big lie from satan did not reprimand him, it is because what satan had said was not wrong. Therefore, Jesus did not find insulting that satan "belittles" His position and sees Him as a simple Son, Him who according to some demons in the flesh would be at the same time God the Father and the Holy Spirit.

### 3.8.4- Book of Luke

**Luke 4:3-4** "And the devil said to Him, "**If You are the Son of God**, command this stone to become bread." <sup>4</sup>But Jesus answered him, saying: It is written, 'Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word of God'."

**Luke 4:9-12** "Then he brought Him to Jerusalem, set Him on the pinnacle of the temple, and said to Him, "If **You are the Son of God**, throw Yourself down from here. <sup>10</sup>For it is written: **He** shall give **His angels** charge over **you**, to keep you, <sup>11</sup>and: In their hands they shall bear you up, lest you dash your foot against a stone." <sup>12</sup>And Jesus answered and said to him, "It has been said: You shall not tempt the Lord your God."

### 3.8.5- Conclusion

Satan has never, either directly or indirectly, declared that Jesus is God the Father and the Holy Spirit. He limited himself in his statement to what Jesus truly is, that is the Son of God. Therefore, we can conclude that Jesus Christ, of His own volition, is neither God the Father, nor the Holy Spirit. And Jesus Christ, of His Father and His God's free will, is neither God the Father, nor the Holy Spirit. And ***Jesus Christ, even in the sight of satan, is neither God the Father, nor the Holy Spirit.*** And Jesus Christ, according to the Holy Bible, is neither God the Father, nor the Holy Spirit.

### 3.9- Ninth Research: Satan Acknowledges that Jesus is the Son of God

#### 3.9.1- Introduction

The work given to us is to go through the Bible in search of all the passages in which ***satan has acknowledged that Jesus is the Son of God.***

#### 3.9.2- The Bible answers us

To verify if some demons in the flesh are right to say that ***Jesus Christ would at the same time be God the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit***, we have searched through the Bible. And to carry out a reliable and more convincing work, we used more than twenty versions of the Bible in many languages. We found many passages in which ***satan acknowledges and declares that Jesus Christ is the Son of God.***

#### 3.9.3- Book of Matthew

**Matthew 4:2-4** "And when He had fasted forty days and forty nights, afterward He was hungry. <sup>3</sup>Now when the tempter came to Him, he said, "If **You are the Son of God**, command that these stones become bread." <sup>4</sup>But He answered and said, 'It is written: Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceeds from the mouth of God'."

**Matthew 4:5-6** "Then the devil took Him up into the holy city, set Him on the pinnacle of the temple, <sup>6</sup>and said to Him, 'If **You are the Son of God**, throw Yourself down.' For it is written: 'He shall give His angels charge over you,' and, 'In their hands they shall bear you up, lest you dash your foot against a stone.'"

#### 3.9.4- Book of Luke

**Luke 4:1-4** "Then Jesus, being filled with the Holy Spirit, returned from the Jordan and was led by the Spirit into the wilderness, <sup>2</sup>being tempted for forty days by the devil. And in those days He ate nothing, and afterward, when they had ended, He was hungry. <sup>3</sup>And the devil said to Him, 'If **You are the Son of God**, command this stone to become bread.' <sup>4</sup>But Jesus answered him, saying, 'It is written: Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word of God'."

**Luke 4:9-12** "Then he brought Him to Jerusalem, set Him on the pinnacle of the temple, and said to Him, "If **You are the Son of God**, throw Yourself down from here. <sup>10</sup>"For it is written: '**He** shall give His angels charge over **you**, to keep you,' <sup>11</sup>"and, 'In their hands they shall bear you up, lest you dash your foot against a stone.' <sup>12</sup>And Jesus answered and said to him, "It has been said: You shall not tempt the Lord your God."

#### 3.9.5- Conclusion

Satan easily acknowledges and declares that Jesus Christ is the Son of God, thus confirming what Jesus Himself says He is. ***Jesus Christ is therefore, even in the sight of satan, the Son of God, and not God the Father, and not the Holy Spirit.***

### 3.10- Tenth Research: Demons Acknowledge that Jesus is the Son of God

#### 3.10.1- Introduction

The work given to us is to go through the Bible in search of all the passages in which ***demons have acknowledged that Jesus is the Son of God.***

#### 3.10.2- The Bible answers us

To verify if some demons in the flesh are right to say that ***Jesus Christ would at the same time be God the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit***, we have searched through the Bible. And to carry out a reliable and more convincing work, we used more than twenty versions of the Bible in many languages. We found many passages in which ***demons have acknowledged and declared that Jesus Christ is the Son of God.***

#### 3.10.3- Book of Matthew

**Matthew 8:28-29** "When He had come to the other side, to the country of the Gergesenes, there met Him two demon-possessed men, coming out of the tombs, exceedingly fierce, so that no one could pass that way. <sup>29</sup>And suddenly they cried out, saying, "**What have we to do with You, Jesus, You Son of God?** Have You come here to torment us before the time?"

#### 3.10.4- Book of Mark

**Mark 1:23-25** "Now there was a man in their synagogue with an unclean spirit. And he cried out, <sup>24</sup>saying, "Let us alone! What have we to do with You, Jesus of Nazareth? Did You come to destroy us? **I know who You are - the Holy One of God!**" <sup>25</sup>But Jesus rebuked him, saying, "Be quiet, and come out of him!"

**Mark 3:11** "And the unclean spirits, whenever they saw Him, fell down before Him and cried out, saying, "**You are the Son of God.**"

**Mark 5:6-8** "When he saw Jesus from afar, he ran and worshiped Him. <sup>7</sup>And he cried out with a loud voice and said, "**What have I to do with You, Jesus, Son of the Most High God?** I implore You by God that You do not torment me." <sup>8</sup>For He said to him, "Come out of the man, unclean spirit!"

#### 3.10.5- Book of Luke

**Luke 4:33-35** "Now in the synagogue there was a man who had a spirit of an unclean demon. And he cried out with a loud voice, <sup>34</sup>saying, "Let us alone! What have we to do with You, Jesus of Nazareth? Did You come to destroy us? **I know who You are - the Holy One of God!**" <sup>35</sup>But Jesus rebuked him, saying, "Be quiet, and come out of him!" And when the demon had thrown him in their midst, it came out of him and did not hurt him."

**Luke 4:41** "And demons also came out of many, crying out and saying, "**You are the Christ, the Son of God!**" And He, rebuking them, did not allow them to speak, for they knew that He was the Christ."

**Luke 8:27-29** "And when He stepped out on the land, there met Him a certain man from the city who had demons for a long time. And he wore no clothes, nor did he live in a house but in the tombs. <sup>28</sup>When he saw Jesus, he cried out, fell down before Him, and with a loud voice said, "**What have I to do with You, Jesus, Son of the Most High God?** I beg You, do not torment me!" <sup>29</sup>For He had commanded the unclean spirit to come out of the man. For it had often seized him, and he was kept under guard, bound with chains and shackles; and he broke the bonds and was driven by the demon into the wilderness."

As you can see, satan and some of his agents are in total disagreement about this topic. Satan himself has never said that Jesus was God the Father and the Holy Spirit, his demons in spirit neither. They have always acknowledged that Jesus is the Son of God, the Son of the Most High God. But some of his agents demons in the flesh, have chosen to oppose his position, and are desperately trying to demonstrate that Jesus is not just the Son of God, the Son of the Most High God, but that He is at the same time God the Father and the Holy Spirit.

By taking this stand, these demons in the flesh are in total contradiction with all the spiritual authorities concerned by this subject. They oppose God the Father; they oppose Jesus Christ the Father's Son; they oppose God's Angels who have all acknowledged that Jesus Christ is the Son of the Most High God; they are opposed to the Apostles and the Disciples of Jesus, who have all acknowledged that Jesus is the Christ, the Son of the living God; they oppose their father the devil; they oppose their colleagues demons in spirit; in short they oppose all.

One could even believe that these demons are rather more intelligent than all. But being more intelligent than their own father satan is all the same unthinkable. It is therefore easier to conclude that they are rather mad. They are mentally ill. It only takes mentally ill to think they are more intelligent than all the other demons in spirit, than the devil, than God's Angels, and than God Himself.

To end, the only advice we can give them is to go and agree with their father the devil on the lies they should convey, if they truly intend to have a minimum of credit from those who will listen to them.

### 3.10.6- Conclusion

Satan has never declared, either directly or indirectly, that Jesus is God the Father and the Holy Spirit, his demons in spirit neither. However, they have all acknowledged and declared that Jesus Christ is the Son of God, the Son of God Most High.

Therefore, we can conclude that Jesus Christ, of His own volition, is neither God the Father, nor the Holy Spirit. And Jesus Christ, of His Father and His God's free will, is neither God the Father, nor the Holy Spirit. And Jesus Christ, even in the sight of satan, is neither God the Father, nor the Holy Spirit. And Jesus Christ, to the knowledge of the demons in spirit, is neither God the Father, nor the Holy Spirit. And Jesus Christ, according to the Holy Bible, is neither God the Father, nor the Holy Spirit. **Therefore, Jesus Christ can only be God the Father and the Holy Spirit according to the will of a few demons in the flesh who are in total contradiction with their father the devil.**

### 3.11- Eleventh Research: The Bible Speaks of the Right Hand of God

#### 3.11.1- Introduction

Dear brethren and dear friends, in this work we have decided to go through the entire Bible in search of all the passages that speak of the right hand of God. What for? You will certainly wonder, and rightly so.

In fact, this research that many of you will rightly consider vain and useless, was imposed on us by a discussion we had with some so-called Christians lately. Some of these so-called children of God were followers of the satanic doctrine derived from the false teachings of **William Marrion Branham, that son of perdition who tried during his ministry, to prove that the Bible was wrong and that God was a liar.** According to this satanic doctrine, **Jesus Christ the Son of God would have no Father, and would be Himself His own Father. In other words, Jesus Christ the Son of God has no Father, and is therefore at the same time the Son, God the Father, and the Holy Spirit.**

Among these so-called children of God who supported this madness, there was one who seemed to have drunk the poison of this satanic doctrine to its dregs. And since no one will ever succeed in demonstrating that the Bible is false while using the Bible, the only thing often left to the demons protesters, is to turn God or the Bible in derision. And unfortunately, by so doing, they make a fool of themselves instead. For, every time that the demonstration of the word of God becomes very clear, in order to continue to contest, they have to play the fools, and to pretend to be facing something too difficult to understand. That is why I encourage all true Children of God to stay away from dispute. Do not forget that dispute is one of the elements with which we identify the children of satan. They accept the word of God with great difficulty, and they always find it too complicated, even when they are faced with points that are very easy to understand.

Among the passages that we had cited to convince these deceivers whom we took for children of God, there was the verse of Acts 7:56 that says: **"Look," he said, "I see heaven open and the Son of Man standing at the right hand of God."** This demon, who absolutely wanted to challenge the truth, got stuck by the clarity of the word of God. And rather than acknowledging the truth and repenting, he tried to prove to us that God could not have a right hand. He then rebelled against this passage of the Bible, and exclaimed in a serious tone: **"A God with a right hand?"** On this, we reminded him that we had just read a Bible verse. It is then that he tried in an incoherent reasoning, while demonstrating a disconcerting sophism, to prove to us that God cannot have a right hand.

According to his speech, God being Spirit, could not have a right hand. To his question, we simply sent him to God to try to get an answer, because we are not the ones saying that God has a right hand, it is God Himself who says so. Moreover, we were not trying to convince him of the fact that God has a right hand, we were just reading a verse written black and white in the Bible. Who could be in a better position than God to answer him? We asked him to go and meet God, and explain to God that a true God cannot have a right hand.

Though this was the first time that we came across this kind of satanic reasoning, not only were we scandalized, but we also knew that some ignorant Christians would already be contaminated by this kind of diabolical teaching. This is what led us to undertake this little research, in order to help all those who would already be possessed by the demons of this doctrine of the devil, and who would also be disputing with incredible conviction, indisputable things, trivial and basic things, things that are easy to understand even for people who are uneducated.

As we did with the previous research, we found it better to group the verses in which the expressions sought are found, first by chapter, and then by book, before obtaining the grand total. In each verse, we have of course **underlined and bolded** all the expressions sought.

The books in which we found the words and/or expressions sought are: **1Kings, 2Chronicles, Psalms, Matthew, Mark, Luke, Acts of the Apostles, Romans, Ephesians, Colossians, Hebrews and 1Peter.**

### 3.11.2- Old Testament

#### 1Kings 22 (1 time)

**1Kings 22:19** "Micaiah continued, "Therefore hear the word of the Lord: I saw the Lord sitting on His throne with all the host of heaven standing around Him on **His right** and on His left."

#### 2Chronicles 18 (1 time)

**2Chronicles 18:18** "Micaiah continued, "Therefore hear the word of the Lord: I saw the Lord sitting on His throne with all the host of heaven standing on **His right** and on His left."

#### Psalms (7 times)

**Psalms 16:11** "You make known to me the path of life; you will fill me with joy in your presence, with eternal pleasures at **your right hand**."

**Psalms 45:9** "Daughters of kings are among your honoured women; at **your right hand** is the royal bride in gold of Ophir."

**Psalms 48:10** "Like your name, O God, your praise reaches to the ends of the earth; your **right hand** is filled with righteousness."

**Psalms 80:15** "The root your **right hand** has planted, the son you have raised up for yourself."

**Psalms 80:17** "Let your hand rest on the man at **your right hand**, the son of man you have raised up for yourself."

**Psalms 110:1** "The Lord says to my lord: Sit at **my right hand** until I make your enemies a footstool for your feet."

**Psalms 110:5** "The Lord is at your **right hand**; he will crush kings on the day of his wrath."

#### Total Old Testament = 9 times



### 3.11.3- New Testament

#### Matthew (6 times)

**Matthew 20:21** "What is it you want?" he asked. She said, "Grant that one of these two sons of mine may sit at **your right** and the other at your left in your kingdom."

**Matthew 20:23** "Jesus said to them: You will indeed drink from my cup, but to sit at **my right** or left is not for me to grant. These places belong to those for whom they have been prepared by my Father."

**Matthew 22:44** "The Lord said to my Lord: Sit at **my right hand** until I put your enemies under your feet."

**Matthew 25:33** "He will put the sheep on **his right** and the goats on his left."

**Matthew 25:34** "Then the King will say to those on **his right**, 'Come, you who are blessed by my Father; take your inheritance, the kingdom prepared for you since the creation of the world'."

**Matthew 26:64** "Yes, it is as you say," Jesus replied. "But I say to all of you: In the future you will see the Son of Man sitting at **the right hand of the Mighty One** and coming on the clouds of heaven."

#### Mark (5 times)

**Mark 10:37** "They replied: Let one of us sit at **your right** and the other at your left in your glory."

**Mark 10:40** "But to sit at **my right** or left is not for me to grant. These places belong to those for whom they have been prepared."

**Mark 12:36** "David himself, speaking by the Holy Spirit, declared: The Lord said to my Lord, '**Sit at my right hand** until I put your enemies under your feet'."

**Mark 14:62** "I am," said Jesus. "And you will see the Son of Man sitting at **the right hand of the Mighty One** and coming on the clouds of heaven."

**Mark 16:19** "After the Lord Jesus had spoken to them, he was taken up into heaven and he sat at **the right hand of God**."

#### Luke (2 times)

**Luke 20:42** "David himself declares in the Book of Psalms: The Lord said to my Lord: 'Sit at **my right hand**'."

**Luke 22:69** "But from now on, the Son of Man will be seated at **the right hand of the mighty God**."

#### Acts (4 times)

**Acts 2:25** "David said about him: I saw the Lord always before me. Because he is at **my right hand**, I will not be shaken."

**Acts 2:34** "For David did not ascend to heaven, and yet he said: The Lord said to my Lord: 'Sit at my right hand'."

**Acts 7:55** "But Stephen, full of the Holy Spirit, looked up to heaven and saw the glory of God, and Jesus standing at the right hand of God."

**Acts 7:56** "Look," he said, "I see heaven open and the Son of Man standing at the right hand of God."

### **Romans (1 time)**

**Romans 8:34** "Who is he that condemns? Christ Jesus, who died - more than that, who was raised to life - is at the right hand of God and is also interceding for us."

### **Ephesians (1 time)**

**Ephesians 1:20** "Which he exerted in Christ when he raised him from the dead and seated him at his right hand in the heavenly realms."

### **Colossians (1 time)**

**Colossians 3:1** "Since, then, you have been raised with Christ, set your hearts on things above, where Christ is seated at the right hand of God."

### **Hebrews (5 times)**

**Hebrews 1:3** "The Son is the radiance of God's glory and the exact representation of his being, sustaining all things by his powerful word. After he had provided purification for sins, he sat down at the right hand of the Majesty in heaven."

**Hebrews 1:13** "To which of the angels did God ever say, "Sit at my right hand until I make your enemies a footstool for your feet?"

**Hebrews 8:1** "The point of what we are saying is this: We do have such a high priest, who sat down at the right hand of the throne of the Majesty in heaven."

**Hebrews 10:12** "But when this priest had offered for all time one sacrifice for sins, he sat down at the right hand of God."

**Hebrews 12:2** "Let us fix our eyes on Jesus, the author and perfecter of our faith, who for the joy set before him endured the cross, scorning its shame, and sat down at the right hand of the throne of God."

### **1Peter (1 time)**

**1Peter 3:22** "Who has gone into heaven and is at God's right hand - with angels, authorities and powers in submission to him."

**Total New Testament = 26 times**

**Total Bible: 9 + 26 = 35**

### 3.11.4- Conclusion

The Bible made mention nearly a hundred times of the right hand of God. This means that God indeed has a right hand, regardless of the definition that we choose to give to that expression, or our understanding of it. It is well established in the Bible that God has a right hand. In this work, we have chosen to limit ourselves to the passages which speak of the right hand of God **as a position**, since the problem of the demons seems to be the fact that Jesus is at the right hand of God.

We assume that their problem is more to do with the position occupied by the Son of God before His father. They are jealous, and in order to trivialize everything, they deny God, deny His right hand, deny His Son, and deny His word. It is in fact the entire Bible that these demons deny. If God does not have a right hand, it means that the Bible that mentions almost a hundred times this expression right hand of God, is false. It is in fact the message that these serpents are trying to convey.

To make this work easier, we chose not count the Bible verses that speak of the right hand of God referring either to the hand of God, or to the arm of God. Beloved, the message is very clear, as you yourselves have seen. From any angle you choose to take the right hand of God, you get more than your share in the Bible. How then is it that demons are trying to prove to us that God who Himself speaks of His right hand, wouldn't have any? Between God and demons who knows God better? And between God and demons who knows better the word of God? Between God and these demons in the flesh, who is better placed to tell us if God has a right hand? It's your turn to answer, and it's your turn to choose whom you want to follow.

Now, to the question ***"A God who has a right hand"***, the answer becomes simple. If the god of demons has no right hand, ours has, and He does not hide it. If for the demons it would be shameful for a god to have a right hand, our God has no shame to tell us that He has a right hand. And I do not think that you and I would become crazy to the point of calling our God to order, and prove to Him that He is wrong. Let's leave the work of demons to demons. Let us not imitate them.

Even if this does no longer surprise us on behalf of the agents of satan, it is always revolting, beloved, to see people denying truths as clear as crystal, and that are clearly laid down in the Bible. Sometimes you wonder whether these serpents that prove that God is a liar have a Bible. They really have it, and they read it. But not being of God, they cannot accept it.

Know that the Lord Jesus Christ, our God and Only Son of our heavenly Father, led us in this study to strengthen and consolidate our discernment. Remember once and for all that **no true child of God has a problem with the word of God**. So from now on, learn to quickly recognize the sons of the devil. No true child of God has a problem with the word of God; no true child of God will ever try to prove that God is a liar, or that the Bible is false, or that God is wrong, or that God is ignorant. You will never see a single true child of God attempting to correct God.

Do no longer waste any minute in sterile discussions with so-called Christians who demonstrate that they know the Bible more than the God of the Bible. Beloved, never wander from what is written.

### 3.12- Twelfth Research: The Number of Verses in the Bible

#### 3.12.1- Introduction

After all the research that we have undertaken to find out whether Jesus Christ was at the same time God the Father, the Son and the Holy Spirit, we found it necessary to engage in a little quiz whose aim is not easily noticeable. This quiz consists in knowing with accuracy the number of verses that the Holy Bible contains.

Of what use can the number of verses of the Bible be to us? We already know the number of books; it is among the elements that help us to differentiate real Bibles from false ones. We also know the number of chapters, it seems to be for us more of a general knowledge. If the number of chapters of the Bible is not so useful to us, since it does not help us to sanctify ourselves more, of what use will the number of verses be to us to warrant the time we spend counting them?

We find ourselves by force of circumstances doing research studies, and even quizzes that we had not planned. We were forced into it by the demons in the flesh who blaspheme against God. Therefore, it is in our determination to dismantle and to undo once and for all this satanic doctrine that not only blasphemes against God and against His Son Jesus Christ, but that also turns away many Christians from the path of truth, that we thought of a possible usefulness of the number of verses of the Bible.

Should we get into mathematics and statistics to defeat the demons? Will a small notion of probability be necessary for a work that is supposed to be spiritual? Far from it! By the grace of God we have already succeeded, through the first eleven research studies, in demonstrating spiritually that the doctrine of demons had no validity.

And if in our twelfth and final research we have recourse to calculations, it is to show the demons that regardless of the method used, be it spiritually or the use of mathematics and a calculation of probabilities, we can very easily undo their blasphemous doctrine.

After the counting of the verses, we will look at the ratio and the percentage of these verses that support the doctrine of demons.

#### 3.12.2- Old Testament

<b>Books</b>	<b>Number of Chapters</b>	<b>Number of Verses</b>
<b>1. Genesis</b>	<b>50</b>	<b>1,533</b>
<b>2. Exodus</b>	<b>40</b>	<b>1,213</b>
<b>3. Leviticus</b>	<b>27</b>	<b>859</b>
<b>4. Numbers</b>	<b>36</b>	<b>1,288</b>
<b>5. Deuteronomy</b>	<b>34</b>	<b>959</b>
<b>6. Joshua</b>	<b>24</b>	<b>658</b>
<b>7. Judges</b>	<b>21</b>	<b>618</b>

<b>8. Ruth</b>	<b>4</b>	<b>85</b>
<b>9. 1Samuel</b>	<b>31</b>	<b>810</b>
<b>10.2Samuel</b>	<b>24</b>	<b>695</b>
<b>11.1Kings</b>	<b>22</b>	<b>816</b>
<b>12.2Kings</b>	<b>25</b>	<b>719</b>
<b>13.1Chronicles</b>	<b>29</b>	<b>942</b>
<b>14.2Chronicles</b>	<b>36</b>	<b>822</b>
<b>15.Ezra</b>	<b>10</b>	<b>280</b>
<b>16.Nehemiah</b>	<b>13</b>	<b>406</b>
<b>17.Esther</b>	<b>10</b>	<b>167</b>
<b>18.Job</b>	<b>42</b>	<b>1,070</b>
<b>19.Psalms</b>	<b>150</b>	<b>2,461</b>
<b>20.Proverbs</b>	<b>31</b>	<b>915</b>
<b>21.Ecclesiastes</b>	<b>12</b>	<b>222</b>
<b>22.Song of Solomon</b>	<b>8</b>	<b>117</b>
<b>23.Isaiah</b>	<b>66</b>	<b>1,292</b>
<b>24.Jeremiah</b>	<b>52</b>	<b>1,364</b>
<b>25.Lamentations</b>	<b>5</b>	<b>154</b>
<b>26.Ezekiel</b>	<b>48</b>	<b>1,273</b>
<b>27.Daniel</b>	<b>12</b>	<b>357</b>
<b>28.Hosea</b>	<b>14</b>	<b>197</b>
<b>29.Joel</b>	<b>3</b>	<b>73</b>
<b>30.Amos</b>	<b>9</b>	<b>146</b>
<b>31.Obadiah</b>	<b>1</b>	<b>21</b>
<b>32.Jonas</b>	<b>4</b>	<b>48</b>
<b>33.Micah</b>	<b>7</b>	<b>105</b>
<b>34.Nahum</b>	<b>3</b>	<b>47</b>
<b>35.Habakkuk</b>	<b>3</b>	<b>56</b>
<b>36.Zephaniah</b>	<b>3</b>	<b>53</b>
<b>37.Haggai</b>	<b>2</b>	<b>38</b>
<b>38.Zechariah</b>	<b>14</b>	<b>211</b>
<b>39.Malachi</b>	<b>4</b>	<b>55</b>
<b>Total of Old Testament</b>	<b>929</b>	<b>23145</b>

In the Old Testament we have found 929 chapters and 23,145 verses.

**3.12.3- New Testament**

<b>Books</b>	<b>Number of Chapters</b>	<b>Number of Verses</b>
<b>1. Matthew</b>	<b>28</b>	<b>1,071</b>
<b>2. Mark</b>	<b>16</b>	<b>678</b>
<b>3. Luke</b>	<b>24</b>	<b>1,151</b>
<b>4. John</b>	<b>21</b>	<b>879</b>
<b>5. Acts</b>	<b>28</b>	<b>1007</b>
<b>6. Romans</b>	<b>16</b>	<b>433</b>
<b>7. 1Corinthians</b>	<b>16</b>	<b>437</b>
<b>8. 2Corinthians</b>	<b>13</b>	<b>257</b>
<b>9. Galatians</b>	<b>6</b>	<b>149</b>
<b>10. Ephesians</b>	<b>6</b>	<b>155</b>
<b>11. Philippians</b>	<b>4</b>	<b>104</b>
<b>12. Colossians</b>	<b>4</b>	<b>95</b>
<b>13. 1Thessalonians</b>	<b>5</b>	<b>89</b>
<b>14. 2Thessalonians</b>	<b>3</b>	<b>47</b>
<b>15. 1Timothy</b>	<b>6</b>	<b>113</b>
<b>16. 2Timothy</b>	<b>4</b>	<b>83</b>
<b>17. Titus</b>	<b>3</b>	<b>46</b>
<b>18. Philemon</b>	<b>1</b>	<b>25</b>
<b>19. Hebrews</b>	<b>13</b>	<b>303</b>
<b>20. James</b>	<b>5</b>	<b>108</b>
<b>21. 1Peter</b>	<b>5</b>	<b>105</b>
<b>22. 2Peter</b>	<b>3</b>	<b>61</b>
<b>23. 1John</b>	<b>5</b>	<b>105</b>
<b>24. 2John</b>	<b>1</b>	<b>13</b>
<b>25. 3John</b>	<b>1</b>	<b>14</b>
<b>26. Jude</b>	<b>1</b>	<b>25</b>
<b>27. Revelation</b>	<b>22</b>	<b>404</b>
<b>Total of New Testament</b>	<b>260</b>	<b>7,957</b>
<b>Total Bible</b>	<b>1,189</b>	<b>31,102</b>

In the New Testament we have found 260 chapters and 7,957 verses.

**3.12.4- How many chapters and verses are in the Bible?**

We have found 1,189 chapters and 31,102 verses in the Holy Bible. These chapters and these verses are divided according to the presentation found in the two tables above. We were more interested in the verses, the final goal being to try to understand the gap that exists between the number of verses that say that Jesus Christ is, at the same time, God the Father, the Son and the Holy Spirit, and the total number of verses of the Holy Bible.

### 3.12.5- How many verses say that Jesus is God the Father and the Holy Spirit?

The reports of the Fifth, Sixth, Seventh and Eighth research studies give us the number zero. This means that the Holy Bible from the Old to the New Testament has never said that Jesus Christ is at the same time God the Father, the Son and the Holy Spirit.

Of the 31,102 verses that the Bible contains there is none that says that Jesus Christ is God the Father, and there is none that says that Jesus Christ is the Holy Spirit. Yet of the first eleven research studies that we have undertaken, we had hundreds of verses saying word for word and clearly, that Jesus Christ is the Son of God, that Jesus Christ is different from God the Father, and that Jesus Christ is not the Holy Spirit. We did not need any analysis, or deduction, or interpretation, or assumption, to confirm that Jesus Christ is as He Himself said, the Son of God, and that He is neither God the Father, nor the Holy Spirit.

This conclusion helps you understand more the teaching on Discernment. If you have not read this teaching yet, we would recommend it. You will find it on our website [www.mcreveil.org](http://www.mcreveil.org). Demons in the flesh are real, and they are the ones that fill the churches today. If not how can one understand that with a teaching that is so clear, with so much evidence that support it, and with no conflicting evidence, there are some so-called pastors and Christians who always strive to demonstrate the contrary.

These so-called servants of God and Christians are driven by utmost wickedness. They know very well that their doctrine is a blasphemy, but they pretend to be ignorant, and give the impression that they are "honest" in what they defend. Meanwhile they trap the weak-minded, and draw them into their net. It is up to you to be careful. ***Satan has neither brothers nor friends and demons have neither brothers nor friends. You must know this.***

This study that we have just undertaken convinces you that the word of God is not very difficult to understand. What is that some people understand it very easily while others have terrible job understanding it. You have the answer in the teaching on Discernment. It is because they are demons. They never accept the word of God. Their mission is to prove that God is a liar.

**Daniel 12:10** says: *"Many shall be purified, made white, and refined, but the wicked shall do wickedly; and **none of the wicked shall understand**, but the wise shall understand."*

I might surprise you by telling you that there are some who will not accept this teaching, despite all this demonstration that the Lord has made, and despite all the evidence that the Lord has put at our disposal, in order to convince the most sceptical man in the world. Again, this is another proof that the word of God is true.

Do no longer allow demons to distort the verses in order to try to tell you what the verses do not say. All these research studies done in a clear way, and their various reports, are a proof for each person to understand that Jesus Christ has never been God the Father, and that Jesus Christ has never been the Holy Spirit.



Beloved in the Lord, the advantage we gained from this teaching is the fact that it helps us on the one hand, to detect around us all the demons that we called, out of ignorance, brothers and sisters, and on the other hand, to end once and for all the discussions about this subject. We must never again waste a single second to discuss with demons that are trying to prove that the Bible is false, because their "jesus" would be at the same time their "god the father" and their "holy spirit".

Whenever you hear the demons say that jesus is the father, the son, and the holy spirit, you should know that they are not talking about Jesus our Saviour, they are talking about their jesus. Do not forget that they have in the world of darkness, demons to which they give names that sow confusion in the minds of several religious people. They have in their world demons that bear the names of jesus, virgin mary, etc. This has nothing to do with Jesus Christ our Master, nor with Mary who was the mother of Jesus, and who later became the wife of Joseph.

For those who will still come to you from now on with this satanic doctrine, this is what you should do. To some, you will ask them to give you just a single verse of the Holy Bible that says without going through the manipulation and distortion of the meaning of the verses, that Jesus Christ is God the Father and the Holy Spirit. Moreover, you should remind them that the Bible contains all the same 31,102 verses. To others, you should simply give them this teaching to read. Flee from distraction and deception.

Beloved, don't you find strange that of 31,102 verses that the Holy Bible contains there is none to support the teaching of these demons? If these people were from God, we would not need to ask them to repent. One must even be suicidal to choose not to repent in the face of this kind of snub the Lord has just bombarded them with. But demons never hesitate to take that suicidal step in order to do evil and harm. *"For they do not sleep unless they have done evil; and their sleep is taken away unless they make someone fall."* Proverbs 4:16. And they are never ashamed. The word shame is not in their vocabulary.

### **3.12.6- The judgment of God based on what is written**

Remember that God will never condemn us based on what is not written. God will never judge us on the basis of what is not written black and white in the Holy Bible. The judgment of God will only be based on what is clearly written in the Holy Bible, and contains in the near 31,102 verses we have just counted.

Do no longer allow yourselves to be led astray by serpents that are not ashamed to tell you that if their doctrine is not written anywhere in the Holy Bible, it is because it is a mystery that they are the only ones to have. Know that these mysteries that those sons of the devil talk about are given to them during the meetings they hold in the occult world. None of these mysteries can come from our God. The word of our God is complete, and God does nothing beyond His word.

***"To the pure, all things are pure, but to those who are corrupted and do not believe, nothing is pure. In fact, both their minds and consciences***

*are corrupted.* <sup>16</sup>***They claim to know God, but by their actions they deny him. They are detestable, disobedient and unfit for doing anything good.*** Titus 1:15-16

### 3.12.7- Conclusion

Through this teaching, the Lord has just compelled the demons whose only stock in trade was this blasphemy that says that Jesus Christ is at the same time God the Father, the Son and the Holy Spirit, to create a new bible, or to update the one they have already made in order to insert in it new verses that will help them to deal with the kind of shame and confusion that they have just encountered.

*"The **God** and **Father** of our Lord Jesus Christ, who is blessed forever, knows that I am not lying."* 2Corinthians 11:31.

#### 4- CONCLUSION

In conclusion, beloved brethren in Christ Jesus and dear friends, know that Jesus Christ is indeed who He told us that He is. ***He is the Lamb of God; He is the Son of God; He is the firstborn over all creation; He is holy and true, He has the key of David, He opens and no one shuts, and He shuts and no one opens; He is the First and the Last, He is the Amen, the Faithful and True Witness; He is the Everlasting Father, He is the Beginning of the creation of God. But He is not God the Father, and He is not the Holy Spirit.***

As we have concluded after one of the research studies that we have undertaken, ***Jesus has never, either directly or indirectly, declared that He is God the Father and the Holy Spirit.*** His Apostles and His other Disciples have never declared it either. And remarkably, even satan and his demons in the spirit have never dared to say that Jesus is God the Father or the Holy Spirit. On the contrary, they all acknowledged that Jesus Christ is the Son of God, the Son of the Most High God. Therefore, you agree with me that some demons in the flesh cannot know Jesus better than Jesus Himself.

Beloved, we can thus conclude without any risk of being wrong that Jesus Christ, of His own volition, is neither God the Father, nor the Holy Spirit. And Jesus Christ, of His Father and of His God's free will, is neither God the Father, nor the Holy Spirit. And Jesus Christ, even in the sight of God's Angels, is neither God the Father, nor the Holy Spirit. Jesus Christ, to the knowledge of His Apostles and of His other Disciples, is neither God the Father, nor the Holy Spirit. And Jesus Christ, even in the sight of satan, is neither God the Father, nor the Holy Spirit. And Jesus Christ, to the knowledge of the demons in spirit, is neither God the Father, nor the Holy Spirit. And Jesus Christ, according to the Holy Bible, is neither God the Father, nor the Holy Spirit. ***Jesus Christ can only be God the Father and the Holy Spirit according to the will of some demons in the flesh who claim to know Jesus better than Jesus Himself.*** So as always, they should fill up the measure of their sins.

Therefore, do not imitate those who have voluntarily chosen Hell. If you treasure your salvation, ***come out quickly from among all these abominable sects that teach that Jesus Christ is at the same time God the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit.*** All demonstrations have been provided to you through this well elaborated study, and all the arguments of this satanic doctrine have been dismantled in the light of the Holy Bible. ***Flee from all these demons who are doing their utmost to demonstrate that God is a liar and that the Holy Bible is false.*** "Woe to him who strives with his Maker!" Isaiah 45:9.

***Jesus Christ is neither God the Father, nor the Holy Spirit. He is simply the Son of God, and He has a Father. This fact is well established in the Bible, and we have demonstrated it to you.*** Although I will displease the demons for whom God the Father does not exist, and according to whom Jesus Christ is Himself God the Father and the Holy Spirit, I will end this teaching by blessing you in these terms: "Grace, mercy, and peace will be with you from ***God the Father and from the Lord Jesus Christ, the Son of the Father, in truth and love.***" Amen! **2John 3.**

I would like to share with you this beautiful song that the Lord has inspired us to compose as we were working on this teaching. You will find its melody on our website.

### IF I KNEW WHO I WERE

*If I only knew who I were in  
The sight of the Lord, my Creator,  
I'd be glad and rejoice all the days of my life.*

1. I die like a mere man,  
And fall like any prince.  
Yet God says: I am a god,  
A child of the Most High,  
Created in His own image, to His  
likeness.

If I only knew who I were in  
The sight of my Saviour!

2. I am often troubled,  
Lonely, and in anguish,  
Yet, God says: "Peace be with you!  
My peace I give to you;  
A peace without measure; you should not  
be afraid,  
For I am preparing in Heaven,  
A place for you near Me."

3. I am often worried,  
Sinking into sorrow  
And into murmuring, yet  
God says: "I am your God,  
Cast your cares upon Me, because I  
care for you;  
And My peace will guard your hearts  
and minds  
Through Christ Jesus, the Lord."

4. I am often fearful,  
Trembling before satan  
And before all his demons.  
Yet, Christ has given me  
Power to tread on snakes and  
scorpions, and over  
All the power of the enemy,  
And nothing will harm me.

5. So, now if I were to,  
Say that I am a god,  
I would not be blaspheming.  
I'm the image of God,  
Jesus Christ lives in me, I also live in Him;  
And He will grant me to sit with Him  
Upon His Father's throne.

*Amen! Amen! Amen! Now I know  
Who I am before my Creator.  
I'm precious in His sight, I am His beloved child.*

*Amen! Amen! Amen! I shall reign  
With Jesus Christ my Redeemer.  
For all eternity, beholding His beauty.*

**Grace to all who love our Lord Jesus Christ with an undying love!**

## **Invitation**

**Dear brothers and sisters,**

**If you have run away from fake churches and would like to know what to do, here are the two options available to you:**

**1- See if around you there are some other children of God who fear God and desire to live according to the Sound Doctrine. If you find any, feel free to join them.**

**2- If you do not find one and wish to join us, our doors are open to you. The only thing we will ask you to do is to first read all the Teachings that the Lord has given us, and which are on our website [www.mcreveil.org](http://www.mcreveil.org), to reassure yourself that they are in conformity with the Bible. If you find them in accordance with the Bible, and are ready to submit to Jesus Christ, and live by the demands of His word, we will gladly welcome you.**

**The grace of the Lord Jesus be with you!**